

"Stories of Faith"

Series

as of January 2009

"And what shall I more say?
for the time would fail me to tell of Gedeon, and of Barak, and of Samson, and of Jephthae;
of David also, and Samuel, and of the prophets:
who through Faith subdued kingdoms, wrought righteousness, obtained Promises, stopped the mouths of
lions"

(Hebrews 11:32,33).

The King James Version of the Bible with notes by Katie Stewart,
including a special addition by D. L. Moody

TABLE OF CONTENTS

The Burning Fiery Furnace

The KJV Bible with notes by Katie Stewart

Noah's Ark

The KJV Bible with notes by Katie Stewart

Elijah and the Prophets of Baal

The KJV Bible with notes by Katie Stewart

Paul, The Christian Hero

by D. L. Moody

Moses, The Servant of God-- Part One

The KJV Bible with notes by Katie Stewart

Moses, The Servant of God-- Part Two

The KJV Bible with notes by Katie Stewart

The Burning Fiery Furnace

King James Version by The Holy Spirit through Daniel

"If it be so, our God Whom we serve is able to deliver us from the Burning Fiery Furnace, and He will deliver us out of thine hand, O king. But if not, be it known unto thee, O king, that we will not serve thy gods, nor worship the golden image which thou hast set up"

(Daniel 3:17,18).

by Katie Stewart
5-31-2000

The Book of Daniel

Chapters 2 & 3

Chapter 2

"IN THE SECOND YEAR OF THE REIGN OF NEBUCHADNEZZAR Nebuchadnezzar dreamed dreams, wherewith his spirit was troubled, and his sleep brake from him. 2 Then the king commanded to call the magicians, and the astrologers, and the sorcerers, and the Chaldeans, for to show the king his dreams. So they came and stood before the king. 3 And the king said unto them, I have dreamed a dream, and my spirit was troubled to know the dream.

4 Then spake the Chaldeans to the king in Syriack, O king, live for ever: tell thy servants the dream, and we will show the interpretation.

5 The king answered and said to the Chaldeans, The thing is gone from me: if ye will not make known unto me the dream, with the interpretation thereof, ye shall be cut in pieces, and your houses shall be made a dunghill. 6 But if ye show the dream, and the interpretation thereof, ye shall receive of me gifts and rewards and great honour: therefore show me the dream, and the interpretation thereof."

The LORD God gave the dream, but did Nebuchadnezzar seek the interpretation from Him?

- (Isaiah 47:12-14) "Stand now with thine enchantments, and with the multitude of thy sorceries, wherein thou hast laboured from thy youth; if so be thou shalt be able to profit, if so be thou mayest prevail. Thou art wearied in the multitude of thy counsels. Let now the astrologers, the stargazers, the monthly prognosticators, stand up, and save thee from these things that shall come upon thee. Behold, they shall be as stubble; the fire shall burn them; they shall not deliver themselves from the power of the flame."

7 "They answered again and said, Let the king tell his servants the dream, and we will show the interpretation of it.

8 The king answered and said, I know of certainty that ye would gain the time, because ye see the thing is gone from me. 9 But if ye will not make known unto me the dream, there is but one decree for you: for ye have prepared lying and corrupt words to speak before me, till the time be changed: therefore *tell me the dream, and I shall know that ye can show me the interpretation thereof.*

10 The Chaldeans answered before the king, and said, **There is not a man upon the Earth that can show the king's matter:** therefore there is no king, lord, nor ruler, that asked such things at any magician, or astrologer, or Chaldean. 11 And it is **a rare thing** that the king requireth, and there is none other that can show it before the king, except the gods, whose dwelling is not with flesh."

This situation is a divine "setup." The LORD gave the wizards and magicians an impossible task. There was no authority on Earth that could expect obedience to this demand by any human power on Earth. And yet, Nebuchadnezzar, as the king of all the Earth was driven to do exactly that!

- (Proverbs 21:1) "The king's heart is in the hand of the LORD, as the rivers of water: He turneth it whithersoever He will."

12 "For this cause the king was angry and very furious, and commanded to destroy all the wise men of Babylon. 13 And the decree went forth that the wise men should be slain; and they sought Daniel and his fellows to be slain.

14 Then Daniel answered with counsel and wisdom to Arioch the captain of the king's guard, which was gone forth to slay the wise men of Babylon: 15 He answered and said to Arioch the king's captain, Why is the decree so hasty from the king? Then Arioch made the thing known to Daniel. 16 Then Daniel went in, and desired of the king that he would give him time, and **that he would show the king the interpretation.** 17 Then Daniel went to his house, and made the thing known to Hananiah, Mishael, and Azariah, his companions: 18 That they would **desire mercies of the God of Heaven** concerning this secret; **that Daniel and his fellows should not perish** with the rest of the wise men of Babylon."

The value that the LORD places in a servant who faithfully trusts Him with life itself-- even when placed in humanly impossible situations-- is limitless. There is NOTHING the LORD would not do for His own.

- (2Chronicles 14:11-12) "And Asa cried unto the LORD his God, and said, LORD, it is nothing with Thee to help, whether with many, or with them that have no power: help us, O LORD our God; for we rest on Thee, and in Thy Name we go against this multitude. O LORD, Thou art our God; let not man prevail against Thee. So the LORD smote the Ethiopians before Asa, and before Judah; and the Ethiopians fled."

The LORD would stop the sun and the moon in their orbits-- if His servant needed it.

- (Joshua 10:12-14) "Then spake Joshua to the LORD in the day when the LORD delivered up the Amorites before the children of Israel, and he said in the sight of Israel, Sun, stand thou still upon Gibeon; and thou, Moon, in the valley of Ajalon. And the sun stood still, and the moon stayed, until the people had avenged themselves upon their enemies. Is not this written in the book of Jasher? So the sun stood still in the midst of heaven, and hasted not to go down about a whole day. And there was no day like that before it or after it, that the LORD hearkened unto the voice of a man: **for the LORD fought for Israel.**"

So, after Daniel's great commitment in faith that God would help them, the LORD, of course arranged that... 19 "then was the secret **revealed** unto Daniel in a night vision.

Then Daniel blessed the God of Heaven. 20 Daniel answered and said,

Blessed be the Name of God for ever and ever: for Wisdom and Might are His: 21 And He changeth the times and the seasons: He removeth kings, and setteth up kings: He giveth Wisdom unto the wise, and Knowledge to them that know Understanding: 22 He revealeth the deep and secret things: He knoweth what is in the darkness, and the Light dwelleth with Him. 23 I thank Thee, and praise Thee, O Thou God of my fathers, Who hast given me Wisdom and Might, and hast made known unto me now what we desired of Thee: for *Thou hast now made known unto us the king's matter.*

24 Therefore Daniel went in unto Arioch, whom the king had ordained to destroy the wise men of Babylon: he went and said thus unto him; Destroy not the wise men of Babylon: bring me in before the king, and I will show unto the king the interpretation.

25 Then Arioch brought in Daniel before the king in haste, and said thus unto him, I have found a man of the captives of Judah, that will make known unto the king the interpretation.

26 The king answered and said to Daniel, whose name was Belteshazzar, Art thou able to make known unto me the dream which I have seen, and the interpretation thereof?

27 Daniel answered in the presence of the king, and said, The secret which the king hath demanded cannot the wise men, the astrologers, the magicians, the soothsayers, show unto the king; 28 **But there is a God in Heaven that revealeth secrets**, and maketh known to the king Nebuchadnezzar **what shall be in the latter days.**"

"Thy dream, and the visions of thy head upon thy bed, are these;

29 As for thee, O king, thy thoughts came into thy mind upon thy bed, what should come to pass hereafter: and He That Revealeth Secrets maketh known to thee what shall come to pass. 30 But as for me, this secret is not revealed to me for any wisdom that I have more than any living, but **for their sakes that shall make known the interpretation to the king, and that thou mightest know the thoughts of thy heart.**

31 Thou, O king, sawest, and behold a great image. This great image, whose brightness was excellent, stood before thee; and the form thereof was terrible. 32 This image's head was of fine gold, his breast and his arms of silver, his belly and his thighs of brass, 33 His legs of iron, his feet part of iron and part of clay."

Side Note Number 1: C. H. Spurgeon-- "While the Lord Jesus takes upon Himself our nature (2 Peter i. 4), He restores in us that image of God (Gen. i. 27) which was blotted and defaced by the fall of Adam. He raises us from the degradation of sin to the dignity of perfection. So that, in a two-fold sense, the Head and members are of one nature, and not like that monstrous image which Nebuchadnezzar saw in his dream. The head was of fine gold, but the belly and the thighs were of brass, the legs of iron, and the feet, part of iron and part of clay. Christ's mystical body is no absurd combination of opposites; the Head is immortal, and the body is immortal, too, for thus the record stands, 'Because I live, ye shall live also.' 'As is the heavenly, such are they also that are heavenly.' 'As we have borne the image of the earthy, we shall also bear the image of the heavenly:' and this shall in a few more years be more fully manifest to us, for 'this corruptible must put on incorruption, and this mortal must put on immortality.' Such as is the Head, such is the body, and every member in particular;--a chosen Head, and chosen members; an accepted Head, and accepted members; a living Head, and living members. If the Head be of pure gold, all the parts of the body are of pure gold also. Thus is there a double union of nature as a basis for the closest communion." --from "Till He Come" --

<http://WhatSaithTheScripture.com/Voice/Spurgeon.Till.He.Come.html> -- by C. H. Spurgeon --

<http://WhatSaithTheScripture.com/Fellowship/Charles.Haddon.Spurgeon.html> --

Side Note Number 2: Tom Stewart-- "How do we arrive at identifying the Beast 'out of the sea' (13:1) with the Roman Empire? To answer that question, we must read the prophecies of the second chapter of Daniel. There, we are given a description of Nebuchadnezzar's dream of a 'great image' (Daniel 2:31), whose 'head was of fine gold [Babylon], his breast and his arms of silver [Medo-Persia], his belly and his thighs of brass [Greece], 33 His legs of iron [Rome], his feet part of iron and part of clay [the Revived Roman Empire]' (2:32-33). The Almighty gave Nebuchadnezzar's dream and its interpretation to Daniel in response to believing prayer, i.e., they desired 'mercies of the God of Heaven concerning this secret... Then was the secret revealed' (Daniel 2:18, 19). 'Thou, O king [Nebuchadnezzar]... art this head of gold [the Babylonian Empire]' (2:37-38). As it was with Daniel, so it is true with the Saints throughout time, divinely revealed prophecy is merely history in its yet to be fulfilled form. '39 And after thee [Nebuchadnezzar] shall arise another kingdom [the Medo-Persian Empire of Darius and Cyrus] inferior to thee, and another third kingdom [the Greek Empire of Alexander the Great] of brass, which shall bear rule over all the Earth. 40 And the fourth kingdom [the Roman Empire] shall be strong as iron' (2:39-40)." --from "A Commentary on the Book of Revelation" Chapter 13: The Antichrist and the False Prophet --

<http://WhatSaithTheScripture.com/The.Holy.Bible/Commentary.Revelations.13.html> -- by Tom Stewart

"34 Thou sawest till that a stone was cut out *without hands*, which smote the image upon his feet that were of iron and clay, and brake them to pieces. 35 Then was the iron, the clay, the brass, the silver, and the gold, *broken to pieces together, and became like the chaff of the summer threshingfloors*; and the wind carried them away, that no place was found for them: and the stone that smote the image became a great mountain, and filled the whole Earth.

36 This is the dream; and we will tell the interpretation thereof before the king. 37 Thou, O king, art **a king of kings: for the God of Heaven hath given thee a kingdom, power, and strength, and glory**. 38 And wheresoever the children of men dwell, the beasts of the field and the fowls of the heaven **hath He given into thine hand**, and **hath made thee ruler over them all**. Thou art this head of gold."

The LORD was very pronounced here, in establishing the true facts to this pompous, earthly "king of kings", that everything he ruled over was NOT attained by his own fleshy hand. "The God of Heaven hath **given thee** a kingdom, power, and strength, and glory", Daniel warned him, and that wherever men lived on the Earth, whatever animals roamed the Earth, and even whatever birds flew the heavens, Nebuchadnezzar ruled over it all-- BY GOD'S OWN CHOOSING. In the vanity of his boastful heart, Nebuchadnezzar wouldn't admit that he was, in effect, God's slave and servant, to do with *however God chose*.

- (Jeremiah 27:4-11) "4 Thus saith the LORD of hosts, the God of Israel; Thus shall ye say unto your masters; 5 **I have made the Earth, the man and the beast that are upon the ground, by My great power and by My outstretched arm, and have given it unto whom it seemed meet unto Me**. 6 And now have I given all these lands into the hand of Nebuchadnezzar the king of Babylon, My servant; and the beasts of the field have I given him also to serve him. 7 And all nations shall serve him, and his son, and his son's son, until the very time of his land come: and then many nations and great kings shall serve themselves of him. 8 And it shall come to pass, that the nation and kingdom which will not serve the same Nebuchadnezzar the king of Babylon, and that will not put their neck under the yoke of the king of Babylon, that nation will I punish, saith the LORD, with the sword, and with the famine, and with the pestilence, until I have consumed them by his hand. 9 Therefore hearken not ye to your prophets, nor to your diviners, nor to your dreamers, nor to your enchanters, nor to your sorcerers, which speak unto you, saying, Ye shall not serve the king of Babylon: 10 For they prophesy a lie unto you, to remove you far from your land; and that I should drive you out, and ye should perish. 11 But the nations that bring their neck under the yoke of the king of Babylon, and serve him, those will I let remain still in their own land, saith the LORD; and they shall till it, and dwell therein."

After affirming His authority over Nebuchadnezzar, the LORD continued to expound on the finiteness of Nebuchadnezzar's kingdom.

"39 And after thee shall arise another kingdom inferior to thee, and another third kingdom of brass, which shall bear rule over all the Earth. 40 And the fourth kingdom shall be strong as iron: forasmuch as iron breaketh in pieces and subdueth all things: and as iron that breaketh all these, shall it break in pieces and bruise. 41 And whereas thou sawest the feet and toes, part of potters' clay, and part of iron, the kingdom shall be divided; but there shall be in it of the strength of the iron, forasmuch as thou sawest the iron mixed with miry clay. 42 And as the toes of the feet were part of iron, and part of clay, so the kingdom shall be partly strong, and partly broken. 43 And whereas thou sawest iron mixed with miry clay, they shall mingle themselves with the seed of men: but they shall not cleave one to another, even as iron is not mixed with clay.

44 And in the days of these kings shall the God of Heaven set up a Kingdom, which shall never be destroyed: and the Kingdom shall not be left to other people, but it **shall break in pieces and consume all these kingdoms**, and it shall stand for ever. 45 Forasmuch as thou sawest that the stone was cut out of the

mountain *without hands*, and that it brake in pieces the iron, the brass, the clay, the silver, and the gold; **the Great God hath made known to the king what shall come to pass hereafter**: and the dream is certain, and the interpretation thereof sure.

46 Then the king Nebuchadnezzar fell upon his face, and worshipped Daniel, and commanded that they should offer an oblation and sweet odours unto him. 47 The king answered unto Daniel, and said, Of a truth it is, that your God is a God of gods, and a Lord of kings, and a Revealer of Secrets, seeing thou couldest reveal this secret."

Nebuchadnezzar makes a "vain show" of recognition to God's authority. After all, God did reveal the secret of the dream, which none of the "gods" of his sorcerers could do. But his rebellion was still evident in that, he "worshipped Daniel, and commanded that they should offer an oblation and sweet odours unto him", thus giving Daniel the treatment meant only for God, for only gods are worshipped.

"48 Then the king made Daniel a great man, and gave him many great gifts, and made him ruler over the whole province of Babylon, and chief of the governors over all the wise men of Babylon. 49 Then Daniel requested of the king, and he set Shadrach, Meshach, and Abednego, over the affairs of the province of Babylon: but Daniel sat in the gate of the king."

The "great image" that King Nebuchadnezzar saw in his dream had a "head" of "fine gold". The king was told by Daniel that the LORD God decreed that this gold head was the King Nebuchadnezzar himself. "Thou art this head of gold." It was also specifically revealed to the king that the LORD God was to set up a Kingdom that would consume all kingdoms, even Nebuchadnezzar's. "It brake in pieces the iron, the brass, the clay, the silver, **and the gold**; the Great God hath **made known to the king** what shall come to pass hereafter." God wanted Nebuchadnezzar to know that his reign was finite. Nebuchadnezzar was not God. His reign was not Eternal. He was not Infinite. Nebuchadnezzar couldn't appreciate the fact that God was trying to reveal the darkness in his heart, and that the outcome of such darkness was destruction, "broken to pieces together, and became like the chaff."

At first confrontation with the revelation in general, the king "fell upon his face, and worshipped Daniel, and commanded that they should offer an oblation and sweet odours unto him. The king answered unto Daniel, and said, Of a truth it is, that your God is a God of gods, and a Lord of kings, and a **Revealer of Secrets**, seeing thou couldest reveal this secret." However, upon reflection, after an unspecified length of time had passed, the pride in this king who ruled all the Earth, rose in rebellion. Had this "Great God", The Revealer of Secrets, set up this whole dream sequence to put him in his place? Who did this God of Daniel's think He was? God of all gods? Lord of all lords? How dare this "Revealer" threaten his might and power! Didn't Nebuchadnezzar rule All the Earth? Would any on Earth oppose him? Didn't All the Earth bow only to him?

- (Isaiah 47:10) "Thy wisdom and thy knowledge, it hath perverted thee; and thou hast said in thine heart, I am, and none else beside me."

And so, King Nebuchadnezzar decided to set up **his own image**. But he would outsmart Daniel's God. King Nebuchadnezzar wouldn't just be the golden head. Oh, no! He would be ALL GOLD! And then he would prove who was *the real God*. He would command the worship of all. Worship belongs only to God! Therefore, with his plan proudly laid out, and himself preserved in the everlasting riches of gold, Nebuchadnezzar proceeded.

Chapter 3

"Nebuchadnezzar the king made an image of gold, whose height was threescore cubits, and the breadth thereof six cubits: he set it up in the plain of Dura, in the province of Babylon. 2 Then Nebuchadnezzar the king sent to gather together the princes, the governors, and the captains, the judges, the treasurers, the counsellors, the sheriffs, and all the rulers of the provinces, to come to the dedication of the image which Nebuchadnezzar the king had set up. 3 Then the princes, the governors, and captains, the judges, the treasurers, the counsellors, the sheriffs, and all the rulers of the provinces, were gathered together unto the dedication of the image that Nebuchadnezzar the king had set up; and they stood before the image that Nebuchadnezzar had set up.

4 Then an herald cried aloud, To you it is commanded, O people, nations, and languages, 5 That at what time ye hear the sound of the cornet, flute, harp, sackbut, psaltery, dulcimer, and all kinds of music, ye fall down and **worship** the golden image that Nebuchadnezzar the king hath set up: 6 And whoso falleth not down and worshippeth shall the same hour be cast into the midst of a Burning Fiery Furnace.

7 Therefore at that time, when all the people heard the sound of the cornet, flute, harp, sackbut, psaltery, and all kinds of music, all the people, the nations, and the languages, fell down and worshipped the golden image that Nebuchadnezzar the king had set up.

8 Wherefore at that time certain Chaldeans came near, and accused the Jews. 9 They spake and said to the king Nebuchadnezzar, O king, live for ever. 10 Thou, O king, hast made a decree, that every man that shall hear the sound of the cornet, flute, harp, sackbut, psaltery, and dulcimer, and all kinds of music, shall fall down and worship the golden image: 11 And whoso falleth not down and worshippeth, that he should be cast into the midst of a Burning Fiery Furnace. 12 There are certain Jews whom thou hast set over the affairs of the province of Babylon, Shadrach, Meshach, and Abednego; these men, O king, have **not regarded thee**: they serve not thy gods, nor worship the golden image which thou hast set up.

13 Then Nebuchadnezzar in his rage and fury commanded to bring Shadrach, Meshach, and Abednego. Then they brought these men before the king. 14 Nebuchadnezzar spake and said unto them, Is it true, O Shadrach, Meshach, and Abednego, do not ye serve my gods, nor worship the golden image which I have set up? 15 Now if ye be ready that at what time ye hear the sound of the cornet, flute, harp, sackbut, psaltery, and dulcimer, and all kinds of music, ye fall down and worship the image **which I have made**; well: but if ye worship not, ye shall be cast the same hour into the midst of a Burning Fiery Furnace; **and who is that God that shall deliver you out of my hands?**"

Here again, Nebuchadnezzar shows the abundance of real hatred he has for God. He is challenging God's right to be God. His fist is clenched in defiance to God's claim over him. NO! It is his own word that rules as his law over his Earth! "Who is that God that shall deliver you out of my hands?" The depth and degree of contempt are displayed in his "fury". His mouth pours forth the poison of his heart.

- (Luke 6:45) "An evil man out of the evil treasure of his heart bringeth forth that which is evil: for of the abundance of the heart his mouth speaketh."

"16 Shadrach, Meshach, and Abednego, answered and said to the king, O Nebuchadnezzar, we are **not careful** to answer thee in this matter. 17 If it be so, **our God Whom we serve is able to deliver us from the Burning Fiery Furnace**, and **He WILL deliver us out of thine hand, O king**. 18 But if not, be it known unto thee, O king, that **we will not serve thy gods, nor worship the golden image** which thou hast set up."

These three Hebrews knew, that one way or another, God would deliver them. So their answer was given freely and full of conviction. They stood in the faith that only came from strong confidence in the One Who had never failed them, "with Whom is no variableness, neither shadow of turning" (James 1:17).

- (Psalm 40:13-17) "13 Be pleased, O LORD, to deliver me: O LORD, make haste to help me. 14 Let them be ashamed and confounded together that seek after my soul to destroy it; let them be driven backward and put to shame that wish me evil. 15 Let them be desolate for a reward of their shame that say unto me, Aha, aha. 16 Let all those that seek Thee rejoice and be glad in Thee: let such as love Thy Salvation say continually, The LORD be magnified. 17 But I am poor and needy; yet the LORD thinketh upon me: Thou art my Help and my Deliverer; make no tarrying, O my God."

"19 Then was Nebuchadnezzar full of fury, and the form of his visage was changed against Shadrach, Meshach, and Abednego: therefore he spake, and commanded that they should heat the furnace one **seven times more than it was wont** to be heated. 20 And he commanded **the most mighty men** that were in his army to bind Shadrach, Meshach, and Abednego, and to cast them into the Burning Fiery Furnace. 21 Then these men were bound in their coats, their hosen, and their hats, and their other garments, and were cast into the midst of the Burning Fiery Furnace. 22 Therefore because the king's commandment was **urgent**, and the furnace exceeding hot, the flame of the fire *slew those men that took up Shadrach, Meshach, and Abednego*. 23 And these three men, Shadrach, Meshach, and Abednego, fell down bound into the midst of the Burning Fiery Furnace.

24 Then Nebuchadnezzar the king was astonished, and rose up in haste, and spake, and said unto his counsellors, Did not we cast three men bound into the midst of the fire? They answered and said unto the king, True, O king. 25 He answered and said, **Lo, I see FOUR MEN LOOSE, walking in the midst of the fire, and they have no hurt; and the form of the fourth is like the SON OF GOD**. 26 Then Nebuchadnezzar came near to the mouth of the Burning Fiery Furnace, and spake, and said, Shadrach, Meshach, and Abednego, ye servants of the Most High God, come forth, and come hither. Then Shadrach, Meshach, and Abednego, came forth of the midst of the fire. 27 And the princes, governors, and captains, and the king's counsellors, being gathered together, saw these men, upon whose bodies the fire had **no power**, nor was an hair of their head singed, neither were their coats changed, nor the smell of fire had passed on them.

28 Then Nebuchadnezzar spake, and said, Blessed be the God of Shadrach, Meshach, and Abednego, Who hath sent His Angel ["the Son of God"], and delivered His servants that trusted in Him, and have changed the king's word, and yielded their bodies, that they might not serve nor worship any god, except their own God. 29 Therefore I make a decree, That every people, nation, and language, which speak any thing amiss against the God of Shadrach, Meshach, and Abednego, shall be cut in pieces, and their houses shall be made a dunghill: because there is no other God that can deliver after this sort. 30 Then the king promoted Shadrach, Meshach, and Abednego, in the province of Babylon."

Notice that Nebuchadnezzar, even after witnessing firsthand that wonderful deliverance, still did not confess the Hebrews' God to be his own.

"Blessed be the God of Shadrach, Meshach, and Abednego"

"which speak any thing amiss against the God of Shadrach, Meshach, and Abednego"

Yes, the king appeared to be impressed. He acknowledged the victory of God's ability to rescue His faithful ones. " Who hath sent His Angel ["the Son of God"], and delivered His servants that trusted in Him." But the impression made wasn't one of submission to the One True God, but of being afraid of God. It frightened him, that God could and would do such a thing-- especially in opposition to him. "And **have changed the king's word**, and yielded their bodies, that they might **not serve nor worship** any god, except their own God." This was not a Godly fear which would work reverence, awe, and love for the LORD. This was the fear of devils.

- (James 2:19) "Thou believest that there is one God; thou doest well: the devils also believe, and tremble."

This was Nebuchadnezzar's second opportunity to experience God's outreach to him. It will take a third effort-- drastic, but effective.

There are many similarities between the account of Nebuchadnezzar and that of the Antichrist in the Book of Revelation. Both ruled the world. Both thought they were God. Both created images to be worshipped. But the grand difference between them was that the revelation of the latter days shown to Nebuchadnezzar, and this miracle of the "Burning Fiery Furnace" were part of a cumulative effect which **eventually led to his conversion**, whereas, the Antichrist never did get the LORD's message. [Read more about Antichrist in our article, "Antichrist Shall Come" -- <http://WhatSaithTheScripture.com/Prophecy/Antichrist.Shall.Come.html> -- by Tom Stewart]

- Nebuchadnezzar's Conversion Experience: (Daniel 4:30-34,37 "30) The king spake, and said, Is not this great Babylon, that *I have built for the house of the kingdom by the might of my power, and for the honour of my majesty?* 31 While the word was in the king's mouth, there fell a voice from Heaven, saying, O king Nebuchadnezzar, to thee it is spoken; The kingdom is departed from thee. 32 And they shall drive thee from men, and thy dwelling shall be with the beasts of the field: they shall make thee to eat grass as oxen, and seven times shall pass over thee, until thou know that the Most High ruleth in the kingdom of men, and giveth it to whomsoever He will. 33 The same hour was the thing fulfilled upon Nebuchadnezzar: and he was driven from men, and did eat grass as oxen, and his body was wet with the dew of heaven, till his hairs were grown like eagles' feathers, and his nails like birds' claws. 34 And at the end of the days I Nebuchadnezzar lifted up mine eyes unto Heaven, and mine understanding returned unto me, and **I blessed the Most High, and I praised and honoured Him that liveth for ever, Whose dominion is an Everlasting Dominion, and His Kingdom is from generation to generation...** 37 **Now I Nebuchadnezzar praise and extol and honour the King of Heaven, all Whose works are Truth, and His ways judgment: and those that walk in pride He is able to abase.**"

Take heed. "What shall we then say to these things? If God be for us, who can be against us?" (Romans 8:31). If your enemies conspire to burn you, the victory is already yours. The LORD causes that you have "quenched the violence of fire, escaped the edge of the sword, out of weakness were made strong, waxed valiant in fight" (Hebrews 11:34). He will be with you, and He WILL deliver you. But "if God be" NOT "for us", but instead, He It is that has thrown you into the fire-- there is no escape; no, not for even an Eternity.

- (Matthew 13:41-42) "The Son of Man shall send forth His angels, and they shall gather out of His Kingdom all things that offend, and them which do iniquity; and shall cast them **into a furnace of fire**: there shall be wailing and gnashing of teeth."
- (Revelation 14:9-12) "9 And the third angel followed them, saying with a loud voice, If any man worship the beast and his image, and receive his mark in his forehead, or in his hand, 10 The same shall drink of the wine of the wrath of God, which is poured out without mixture into the cup of His indignation; and he shall be tormented with fire and brimstone in the presence of the holy angels, and in the presence of the Lamb: 11 And the smoke of their torment ascendeth up **for ever and ever**: and they have no rest day nor night, who worship the beast and his image, and whosoever receiveth the mark of his name. 12 Here is the patience of the saints: here are they that keep the Commandments of God, and the faith of Jesus."

"8 We are troubled on every side,
yet not distressed;

we are perplexed, but not in despair;
9 persecuted, but not forsaken;
cast down, but not destroyed;

10 always bearing about in the body
the dying of the LORD Jesus,
that the Life also of Jesus
might be made manifest in our body...

16 For which cause **we faint not**;
but though our outward man perish,
yet the inward man is
renewed day by day.

17 For our light affliction,
which is but for a moment,
worketh for us a far more exceeding
and Eternal weight of GLORY;

18 While we look
not at the things which are seen,
but at the things which are not seen:
for the things which are seen
are temporal;
but the things which are not seen
are Eternal"

(2Corinthians 4:8-10,16-18).

End of "The Burning Fiery Furnace"

Noah's Ark

King James Version by The Holy Spirit through Moses
with notes by Katie Stewart

"By FAITH Noah, being warned of God of things **not seen as yet**, moved with fear, prepared an ark to the saving of his house; by the which he condemned the world, and became heir of the righteousness which is by FAITH"
(Hebrews 11:7).

by Katie Stewart
6-24-2000

The Book of Genesis
Chapters 5:28 - 9:19

Chapter 5

"LAMECH LIVED AN HUNDRED EIGHTY AND TWO YEARS, and begat a son: 29 And he called his

name Noah, saying, This same shall **comfort** us concerning our work and toil of our hands, because of the ground which the LORD hath **cursed**... 32 And Noah was five hundred years old: and Noah begat Shem, Ham, and Japheth."

Noah was "called... with an holy calling, not according to [Noah's] works, but according to [God's] Own Purpose and Grace, which was given us IN Christ Jesus before the world began" (2Timothy 1:9). Noah's "purpose", preordained by God, was **to demonstrate that God's "comfort" delivers a righteous people "IN Christ Jesus" from a sinful, "cursed" people who are WITHOUT "Christ Jesus"**. "Comfort" may not have been the word we would have first chosen to describe Noah's involvement in the world-ending event known as "The Flood".

- (2Peter 2:5) "And spared not the old world, but saved Noah the eighth person, a preacher of Righteousness, bringing in The Flood upon the world of the ungodly."

"Judgment" definitely comes to the forefront of choice guesses as to what Noah's name could have meant. "A preacher of Righteousness" describes what Noah "preached" for, but by its very nature, also declares what Noah "preached" against.

- (Matthew 12:30) Jesus said, "He that is not with Me is against Me."

But Scripture records for Eternity the fact of Noah's name, and the meaning of Noah's name. Noah was to be God's "comfort" from the curse or "cursed". **Noah was named "Comfort" to reveal the "rest" we have IN the Salvation Ark of Jesus Christ.**

5146h. Noach from 5117; "rest," patriarch who survived The Flood. --from "Strong's Concordance"

The Hebrew for "Noah" is "rest". Noah rested ABOVE the judgment-- not in it. Noah and his ark are a type for Christ and His Rapture.

Just "as" Noah, "so shall" Christ.

- (Matthew 24:37) "But **as** the days of Noe were, **so shall** also the Coming of the Son of Man be."
- (Luke 17:26-27) "And **as** it was in the days of Noe, **so shall** it be also in the days of the Son of Man. They did eat, they drank, they married wives, they were given in marriage, until the day that Noe entered into the ark, and The Flood came, and destroyed them all."

Just like "the ark", so is the Rapture.

- (Genesis 8:9) "He [Noah] put forth his hand, and took her [the dove], and **pulled her in unto him** into the ark." Just like Jesus pulls "her", His Bride, "in unto" Himself.
- (Luke 21:36) "Watch ye therefore, and pray always, that ye may be accounted worthy **to escape all these things** that shall come to pass, and to stand before the Son of Man."
- (Genesis 7:15-16) "They went in unto Noah into the ark, two and two of all flesh, wherein is the breath of life... as God had commanded him: and **the LORD shut him in.**"
- (Genesis 6:18) "But with thee will **I establish My Covenant; and thou shalt come into the ark**, thou, and thy sons, and thy wife, and thy sons' wives with thee."

- (Genesis 7:1) "And the LORD said unto Noah, Come thou and all thy house **into the ark; for thee have I seen righteous** before Me in this generation."

Judgment was about to fall on the sin-filled world of that day.

- (2Peter 3:6) "Whereby the world that then was, being overflowed with water, perished."

And judgment is about to fall on the sin-filled world of today.

- (Jude 14-15) "And Enoch also, the seventh from Adam, prophesied of these, saying, Behold, the LORD cometh with ten thousands of His saints, **to execute judgment upon all, and to convince all that are ungodly** among them of all their ungodly deeds which they have ungodly committed, and of all their hard speeches which ungodly sinners have spoken against Him." [Read more: "The Most Negative Verse in the Bible" -- http://WhatSaithTheScripture.com/Fellowship/Edit_Most.Negative.Verse.html -- by Tom Stewart.]

Chapter 6

And it came to pass, when men began to multiply on the face of the Earth, and daughters were born unto them, ² That the sons of God saw the daughters of men that they were fair; and they took them wives of all which they chose."

The LORD wants us to take special notice of the type of sin that was **the most common** just prior to the world's judgment. "The sons of God" thought so little of the Almighty that they would actually join themselves *in the most intimate way*, to God's enemies. God's people are NOT to choose their spouses from among the ungodly. We are talking about two separate worlds, with opposite motives, antagonistic values, and NO common ground. Men obey God-- in ALL things-- or they don't. There is no middle ground. There are no shades of gray. There is only Divine Light, or darkness forever.

- (Ephesians 5:7,11) "7 Be not ye therefore partakers with them... 11 And have no fellowship with the unfruitful works of darkness, but rather reprove them."
- (2Corinthians 6:14) "Be ye not unequally yoked together with unbelievers: for what fellowship hath righteousness with unrighteousness? and what communion hath Light with darkness?"
- (Numbers 16:26) "Depart, I pray you, from the tents of these wicked men, and touch nothing of theirs, **lest ye be consumed in all their sins.**"

Marriage is to be a sacred union, where two people are joined together BY GOD into **one**.

- (Ephesians 5:31) "For this cause shall a man leave his father and mother, and shall be joined unto his wife, and they two shall be one flesh."
- (Malachi 2:15) "And wherefore one? **That He might seek a Godly seed.** Therefore take heed to your spirit, and let none deal treacherously against the wife of his youth."
- (Mark 10:9) "What therefore **God hath joined together**, let not man put asunder."

If a servant of the LORD disobeys God and marries an unbeliever, assuredly, they will have problems.

- (Amos 3:3) "Can two walk together, except they be agreed?"

- (James 4:4) "Know ye not that the friendship of the world is **enmity** with God? whosoever therefore will be a friend of the world is the **enemy** of God."

The **rebellious** act of one who "confesses with the mouth" (Romans 10:10) the LORD Jesus, to sinfully make physical union together with one who defies God, makes spiritual union with God *impossible*.

- (James 4:17) "To him that **knoweth** to do good, and doeth it not, to him it is **sin**."
- (1Corinthians 6:16) "What? know ye not that he which is joined to an harlot is one body? for two, saith he, shall be one flesh."
- (2Corinthians 6:16) "And **what agreement** hath the temple of God with idols? for ye are the temple of the living God; as God hath said, I will dwell in them, and walk in them; and I will be their God, and they shall be my people."

IF the LORD's servant repents, there is hope.

- (1Corinthians 7:12-16) "12 If any brother hath a wife that believeth not, and she be pleased to dwell with him, let him not put her away. 13 And the woman which hath an husband that believeth not, and if he be pleased to dwell with her, let her not leave him. 14 For the unbelieving husband is sanctified by the wife, and the unbelieving wife is sanctified by the husband: else were your children unclean; but now are they holy. 15 But if the unbelieving depart, let him depart. A brother or a sister is not under bondage in such cases: but God hath called us to peace. 16 For what knowest thou, O wife, whether thou shalt save thy husband? or how knowest thou, O man, whether thou shalt save thy wife?"

But, because there was **no repentance**, in Noah's day (nor in our own), for the fact that "the sons of God saw the daughters of men that they were fair; and they took them wives of all which they chose", there was **no hope**.

"3 And the LORD said, My Spirit shall not always strive with man, for that he also is flesh: yet his days shall be **an hundred and twenty years**."

This was the length of time, "an hundred and twenty years," that God gave Noah to build the ark before judgment fell on the disobedient.

- (1Peter 3:20-21) "When once the longsuffering of God waited in the days of Noah, while the ark was a preparing, wherein few, that is, eight souls were saved by water."

"4 There were giants in the Earth in those days; and also after that, when the sons of God came in unto the daughters of men, and they bare children to them, the same became mighty men which were of old, men of renown.

5 And God saw that the wickedness of man was great in the Earth, and that every imagination of the thoughts of his heart was only evil continually. 6 And it repented the LORD that He had made man on the Earth, and it grieved Him at His heart. 7 And the LORD said, I will destroy man whom I have created from the face of the Earth; both man, and beast, and the creeping thing, and the fowls of the air; for it repenteth Me that I have made them.

8 But Noah found Grace in the eyes of the LORD.

9 These are the generations of Noah: Noah was **a just man and perfect** in his generations, and **Noah**

walked with God. 10 And Noah begat three sons, Shem, Ham, and Japheth."

Noah, being "perfect", gave his finite 100% in the same manner that God gives His infinite 100%. [Read more on "perfection": "An Urgent Call to Christian Perfection, Or, An Exposition of the Doctrine of Christian Perfection" -- <http://WhatSaithTheScripture.com/Fellowship/Exposition.Perfection.html> -- by Tom Stewart.]

- (Matthew 5:48) "Be ye therefore perfect, even as your Father which is in Heaven is Perfect."
- (Philippians 3:15) "Let us therefore, as many as be perfect, be thus minded: and if in any thing ye be otherwise minded, God shall reveal even this unto you."

"11 The Earth also was corrupt before God, and the Earth was filled with violence. 12 And God looked upon the Earth, and, behold, it was corrupt; for all flesh had corrupted his way upon the Earth."

- (Judges 17:6) "Every man did that which was right in his **own** eyes."
- (Proverbs 16:2) "All the ways of a man are clean in his **own** eyes; but the LORD weigheth the spirits."

"13 And God said unto Noah, The end of all flesh is come before Me; for the Earth is filled with violence through them; and, behold, I will destroy them with the Earth."

- (Matthew 16:27) "For the Son of Man shall come in the glory of His Father with His angels; and then He shall reward every man according to his works."
- (Matthew 24:3, 30) "3 And as He sat upon the mount of Olives, the disciples came unto Him privately, saying, Tell us, when shall these things be? and what shall be the sign of Thy Coming, and of the End of the world?... 30 Then shall appear the sign of the Son of Man in heaven: and then shall all the tribes of the Earth mourn, and they shall see the Son of Man Coming in the clouds of heaven with Power and great Glory."

"14 Make thee an ark of gopher wood; rooms shalt thou make in the ark, and shalt pitch it within and without with pitch. 15 And this is the fashion which thou shalt make it of: the length of the ark shall be three hundred cubits, the breadth of it fifty cubits, and the height of it thirty cubits. 16 A window shalt thou make to the ark, and in a cubit shalt thou finish it above; and the door of the ark shalt thou set in the side thereof; with lower, second, and third stories shalt thou make it. 17 And, behold, I, even I, do bring a flood of waters upon the Earth, to destroy all flesh, wherein is the breath of life, from under heaven; and every thing that is in the Earth shall die.

18 But **with thee will I establish My Covenant**; and thou shalt come into the ark, thou, and thy sons, and thy wife, and thy sons' wives with thee. 19 And of every living thing of all flesh, two of every sort shalt thou bring into the ark, to keep them alive with thee; they shall be male and female. 20 Of fowls after their kind, and of cattle after their kind, of every creeping thing of the Earth after his kind, two of every sort shall come unto thee, to keep them alive. 21 And take thou unto thee of **all food** that is eaten, and thou shalt gather it to thee; and it shall be for food for thee, and for them. 22 Thus did Noah; according to ALL that God commanded him, so did he."

The reason the LORD made a Covenant with Noah was because He knew Noah to be a faithful man, one which would keep a Covenant with Himself. "Thus did Noah; according to ALL that God commanded him, so did he." FAITH in God causes faithfulness in man. FAITH is the foundation and "substance of things hoped for, the evidence of things not seen" (Hebrews 11:1). "Without FAITH it is impossible to please Him [the LORD]: for he that cometh to God **must believe** that He is, and that He is a Rewarder of them that

diligently seek Him" (6). When a man, woman, or child comes to God in FAITH, and believes whatever God says by doing whatever God commands then "God is not ashamed to be called their God" (16). God enters into Covenant with His people, and never fails to do as He promised. A covenant is a two-way agreement-- not just an unconditional promise. God has "prepared for them a City" (16), "a Better Country, that is, an heavenly" (16) in beauty and majesty, with "a far more exceeding and Eternal weight of Glory" (2Corinthians 4:17). And that's just God's part after this present life is over. His part is also to be with us, and in us ("Emmanuel, which being interpreted is, God with us" [Matthew 1:23]), in this life until the next.

- (Isaiah 8:10) "Take counsel together, and it shall come to nought; speak the word, and it shall not stand: for God is with us."
- (Deuteronomy 32:9) "For the LORD'S portion is His people."
- (2Timothy 4:18) "And the LORD shall **deliver me** from every evil work, and will **preserve me** unto His heavenly Kingdom: to Whom be Glory for ever and ever. Amen."

Our part in being faithful to God and the Covenant we make with Him, is to love Him enough to believe and obey Him-- no matter what comes.

- (Lamentations 3:24) "The LORD is my Portion, saith my soul; therefore will I hope in Him."

Noah loved the LORD so much that he believed what God told him, and did what God told him to do.

- (Hebrews 11:7) "By FAITH Noah, being warned of God of things **not seen as yet**, moved with fear, *prepared an ark to the saving of his house*; by the which he condemned the world, and became heir of the righteousness which is by FAITH."

Chapter 7

"And the LORD said unto Noah, Come thou and all thy house into the ark; **for thee have I seen righteous before Me** in this generation. 2 Of every clean beast thou shalt take to thee by sevens, the male and his female: and of beasts that are not clean by two, the male and his female. 3 Of fowls also of the air by sevens, the male and the female; to keep seed alive upon the face of all the Earth. 4 For yet seven days, and I will cause it to rain upon the Earth forty days and forty nights; and every living substance that I have made will I destroy from off the face of the Earth.

5 And Noah did according unto ALL that the LORD commanded him. 6 And Noah was six hundred years old [six = the number of man, i.e., "Here is wisdom. Let him that hath understanding count the number of the beast: for it is **the number of a man**; and his number is Six hundred threescore and six [666]" (Revelation 13:18)] when The Flood of waters was upon the Earth. 7 And Noah went in, and his sons, and his wife, and his sons' wives with him, into the ark, because of the waters of The Flood. 8 Of clean beasts, and of beasts that are not clean, and of fowls, and of every thing that creepeth upon the Earth, 9 there went in two and two unto Noah into the ark, the male and the female, as God had commanded Noah. 10 And it came to pass after seven days, that the waters of The Flood were upon the Earth.

11 In the six hundredth year of Noah's life, in the second month, the seventeenth day of the month, the same day were all the fountains of the great deep broken up, and the windows of heaven were opened. 12 And the rain was upon the Earth forty days and forty nights.

13 **In the selfsame day entered Noah**, and Shem, and Ham, and Japheth, the sons of Noah, and Noah's

wife, and the three wives of his sons with them, into the ark; 14 They, and every beast after his kind, and all the cattle after their kind, and every creeping thing that creepeth upon the Earth after his kind, and every fowl after his kind, every bird of every sort. 15 And they went in unto Noah into the ark, two and two of all flesh, wherein is the breath of life. 16 And they that went in, went in male and female of all flesh, as God had commanded him: and **the LORD shut him in.**"

Everything that God said would happen, did happen. The animals, "two of **every** beast after his kind" walked into the ark "**unto** Noah". "Two of **all** flesh, wherein is the breath of life" from over the "**face** of the Earth", gathered at the ark and entered on "the **selfsame** day" that the rain **began** to fall! Seven days before the rain was to begin, God gave warning. "For yet seven days, and I will cause it to rain upon the Earth forty days and forty nights; and every living substance that I have made will I destroy from off the face of the Earth." Noah had to wait a whole week, the clock ticking the countdown, until the most impossible thing in the whole world was to happen! Mockers and scorners must have tried his FAITH in God. They always do, "saying, Where is the Promise of His Coming? for since the fathers fell asleep, all things continue as they were from the beginning of the Creation" (2Peter 3:4). "An hundred and twenty years" in the making, those last seven days must have been quite a trial. After building the most unusual vessel in the world, hoping to load it with the biggest collection of animals, reptiles, insects, etc., in the world, and then expecting a worldwide flood to wipe out all of humanity not on that vessel-- Noah's FAITH was then tested with a WAIT! And Noah passed his test with a sure FAITH in what God had told him. "And the LORD shut him in."

"17 And The Flood was forty days upon the Earth; and **the waters increased**, and bare up the ark, and it was lift up **above the Earth**. 18 And **the waters prevailed**, and were **increased greatly** upon the Earth; and the ark went upon the face of the waters. 19 And the waters **prevailed exceedingly** upon the Earth; and all the high hills, that were under the whole heaven, **were covered**. 20 **Fifteen cubits upward did the waters prevail...**"

[cu•bit: n. 1. An ancient unit of linear measure, originally equal to the length of the forearm from the tip of the middle finger to the elbow, or about 17 to 22 inches (43 to 56 centimeters). Middle English *cubite* from Latin *cubitum* cubit, elbow.] --from "American Heritage Dictionary. "Fifteen cubits" equals 21.25 to 27.5 feet.

"...and the **mountains were covered**. 21 And **all flesh died** that moved upon the Earth, both of **fowl**, and of **cattle**, and of **beast**, and of **every creeping thing** that creepeth upon the Earth, **and every man**: 22 all in whose nostrils was the breath of life, **of all that was in the dry land, died**. 23 And **every living substance was destroyed which was upon the face of the ground**, both man, and cattle, and the creeping things, and the fowl of the heaven; and they were destroyed from the Earth: and **Noah only remained alive, and they that were with him in the ark**. 24 And **the waters prevailed** upon the Earth an hundred and fifty days."

- (Matthew 24:37-39) "37 But as the days of Noe were, so shall also the Coming of the Son of Man be. 38 For as in the days that were before The Flood they were eating and drinking, marrying and giving in marriage, **until the day** that Noe entered into the ark, 39 and **knew not until The Flood came**, and took them all away; so shall also the Coming of the Son of Man be."
- (Job 22:15-17) "15 Hast thou marked the old way which wicked men have trodden? 16 which were cut down out of time, whose foundation was overflown with a Flood: 17 which said unto God, Depart from us: and what can the Almighty do for them?"

As the door of the ark closes by the hand of God, Noah's test continues. It's difficult to appreciate just what Noah must have felt, but the LORD gives us a record of what happened that we might try. Being "of like

passions" (Acts 14:15) as Noah, how would you feel if you knew:

1. "the waters increased"
2. "the ark... was lift up above the Earth"
3. "the waters prevailed, and were increased greatly"
4. "the waters prevailed exceedingly"
5. "Fifteen cubits upward did the waters prevail"
6. "the mountains were covered"
7. "all flesh died... fowl, and of cattle, and of beast, and of every creeping thing that creepeth upon the Earth, and every man"
8. "every living substance was destroyed which was upon the face of the ground"
9. "Noah only remained alive, and they that were with him in the ark"
10. "And the waters prevailed upon the Earth an hundred and fifty days"

Noah was a man of FAITH. He believed God. And since "of a Truth I perceive that God is no respecter of persons" (Acts 10:34), I know, that as the LORD later said of David, "a man after Mine Own Heart, which shall fulfil ALL My will" (Acts 13:22), so would He feel about Noah also, or of any child of His that obeyed in FAITH.

Chapter 8

"And **God remembered Noah**, and every living thing, and all the cattle that was with him in the ark: and God made a wind to pass over the Earth, and the waters **asswaged**; 2 the fountains also of the deep and the windows of heaven were **stopped**, and the rain from heaven was **restrained**; 3 And the waters **returned from off the Earth continually**: and after the end of the hundred and fifty days the waters were **abated**. 4 And the ark rested in the seventh month, on the seventeenth day of the month, upon the mountains of Ararat. 5 And **the waters decreased continually** until the tenth month: in the tenth month, on the first day of the month, were the tops of the mountains seen."

Noah's FAITH in God was not confounded.

- (Psalm 62:5) "My soul, wait thou only upon God; for my expectation is from Him."
- (Proverbs 23:18) "For surely there is an end; and thine expectation shall not be cut off."
- (Philippians 1:20) "According to my earnest expectation and my hope, that in nothing I shall be ashamed."

"God remembered Noah," and left us His Record that we also would have FAITH in Him and be "remembered" by Him.

1. "the waters asswaged"
2. "the fountains also of the deep and the windows of heaven were stopped"
3. "the rain from heaven was restrained"
4. "the waters returned from off the Earth continually"
5. "after the end of the hundred and fifty days the waters were abated"
6. "the waters decreased continually"

"6 And it came to pass at the end of forty days, that Noah opened the window of **the ark which he had made**: 7 And he sent forth a raven, which went forth to and fro, until the waters were dried up from off the Earth. 8 Also he sent forth a dove from him, to see if the waters were abated from off the face of the ground; 9 But the dove found no rest for the sole of her foot, and she returned unto him into the ark, for the waters were on the face of the whole Earth: then **he put forth his hand, and took her, and pulled her in unto him into the ark.**"

Just like "the ark", so is the Rapture. Both require **patience**. Both are meant to **rescue** the righteous.

Side Note Number 1: David Stewart-- "The Mind of Christ reveals circumstances which we share with Brother Noah. The one circumstance that interests me at this moment, is that of waiting 'upon the LORD'. 'And it shall be said in that day, Lo, this is our God; we have waited for Him, and He will save us: this is the LORD; we have waited for Him, we will be glad and rejoice in His Salvation' (Isaiah 25:9)... Noah knew he had 120 years to prepare his Ark. That's more than a lifetime to most modern men. He had to wait for the LORD to fulfill His Word for more than the length of time it takes us to be born and to die of old age! 'Wait on the LORD, and keep His way, and He shall exalt thee to inherit the land: when the wicked are cut off, thou shalt see it. For evildoers shall be cut off: but those that wait upon the LORD, they shall inherit the earth' (Psalm 37:34,9). That, by itself, shows what an amazing quality of perseverance this diligent man, Noah, possessed! 'Watching thereunto with all perseverance' (Ephesians 6:18). 'The hand of the diligent shall bear rule' (Proverbs 12:24). And did Noah 'bear rule'? He 'prepared an Ark to the saving of his house; by the which he condemned the world.'" --from "They That Wait Upon The LORD: Part 1: Noah" --

<http://WhatSaithTheScripture.com/Fellowship/They.That.Wait.Noah.html> -- by David Stewart.

"10 And he stayed yet other seven days; and again he sent forth the dove out of the ark; 11 And the dove came in to him in the evening; and, lo, in her mouth was an olive leaf [a symbol of peace] plucked off: so Noah knew that the waters were abated from off the Earth. 12 And he stayed yet other seven days; and sent forth the dove; which returned not again unto him any more. 13 And it came to pass in the six hundredth and first year, in the first month, the first day of the month, **the waters were dried up from off the Earth**: and Noah removed the covering of the ark, and looked, and, behold, the face of the ground was dry. 14 And in the second month, on the seven and twentieth day of the month, was the Earth dried.

15 And God spake unto Noah, saying, 16 Go forth of the ark, thou, and thy wife, and thy sons, and thy sons' wives with thee. 17 Bring forth with thee every living thing that is with thee, of all flesh, both of fowl, and of cattle, and of every creeping thing that creepeth upon the Earth; that they may breed abundantly in the Earth, and be fruitful, and multiply upon the Earth.

18 And Noah went forth, and his sons, and his wife, and his sons' wives with him: 19 Every beast, every creeping thing, and every fowl, and whatsoever creepeth upon the Earth, after their kinds, went forth out of the ark. 20 And **Noah builded an altar unto the LORD**; and took of every clean beast, and of every clean

fowl, and offered burnt offerings on the altar.

21 And **the LORD smelled a sweet savour**; and the LORD said in His heart, I will not again curse the ground any more for man's sake; for the imagination of man's heart is evil from his youth; neither will I again smite any more every thing living, as I have done. 22 While the Earth remaineth, seedtime and harvest, and cold and heat, and summer and winter, and day and night shall not cease."

When Noah "took of every clean beast, and of every clean fowl, and offered burnt offerings on the altar", it must have taken a great amount of FAITH. Just think, the Earth had just been cleansed from any viable land-based food sources, and now you are going to take some of that precious animal cargo that is to "breed abundantly in the Earth, and be fruitful, and multiply", kill it, and offer it on an altar. Noah was grateful! Noah believed that of "every clean beast, and of every clean fowl" that had entered the ark by sevens, i.e., "of every clean beast thou shalt take to thee by sevens, the male and his female... of fowls also of the air by sevens, the male and the female", that part of the "sevens" were to be used for sacrificial offerings to the LORD. And when the time came to offer those animals, **Noah's obedience demonstrated his FAITH, his love, and his gratitude**. And from Noah's time until our's, there has always been "seedtime and harvest, and cold and heat, and summer and winter, and day and night". Therefore, the LORD accepted Noah's sacrifice of thanksgiving, and it was truly "a **sweet savour**"! For "without FAITH it is impossible to please Him: for he that cometh to God must believe that He is, and that He is a Rewarder of them that diligently seek Him" (Hebrews 11:6).

Chapter 9

"And God blessed Noah and his sons, and said unto them, Be fruitful, and multiply, and replenish the Earth. 2 And the fear of you and the dread of you shall be upon every beast of the Earth, and upon every fowl of the air, upon all that moveth upon the Earth, and upon all the fishes of the sea; into your hand are they delivered. 3 Every moving thing that liveth shall be meat for you; even as the green herb have I given you all things. 4 But flesh with the life thereof, which is the blood thereof, shall ye not eat. 5 And surely your blood of your lives will I require; at the hand of every beast will I require it, and at the hand of man; at the hand of every man's brother will I require the life of man. 6 Whoso sheddeth man's blood, by man shall his blood be shed: for **in the image of God made He man**. [For more concerning "the image of God made He man", please read, "What the Bible Says About Abortion" -- <http://WhatSaithTheScripture.com/Fellowship/What.Bible.Says.Abortion.html> -- by Katie Stewart.] 7 And you, **be ye fruitful, and multiply; bring forth abundantly in the Earth, and multiply therein.**"

Side Note Number 2: Tom Stewart-- "According to the Food and Agriculture Organization (FAO) of the UN, food production must double in order to have enough food for the 7.8 billion people expected by 2025. And, in 2050, India is projected to have slightly more people than China-- if the LORD should tarry. 'For yet a little while, and He that shall come will come, and will not tarry' (Hebrews 10:37).

The All Wise God certainly knew man's prospects when He gave the command to 'be fruitful, and multiply' (Genesis 1:28). Because ungodly man holds the 'Truth in unrighteousness' (Romans 1:18), the fruitfulness of having children that God intended to be a blessing for him, has become his curse. 'Lo, children are an heritage of the LORD: and the fruit of the womb is His reward' (Psalms 127:3). 'If ye will not hear, and if ye will not lay it to heart, to give glory unto My Name, saith the LORD of Hosts, I will even send a curse upon you, and I will curse your blessings: yea, I have cursed them already, because ye do not lay it to heart' (Malachi 2:2). But, could not the All Powerful God have miraculously multiplied the planet's resources to have supplied man's needs, if they had walked in obedience? Certainly. 'Thou gavest also Thy Good Spirit to instruct them, and witheldest not Thy manna from their mouth, and gavest them water for their thirst'

(Nehemiah 9:20).

But, in the Providence of God, the Eternal God understood that rebellious mankind would reach a conclusion, beyond which He would not allow them to continue. 'Because He hath appointed a day, in the which He will judge the world in righteousness by that Man [Christ Jesus] Whom He hath ordained; whereof He hath given assurance unto all men, in that He hath raised [Jesus] from the dead' (Acts 17:31). It was a belief of the Early Church, as written in the extra-biblical Epistle of Barnabas, that man's time on this planet corresponded to the Creation Week. 'But, beloved, be not ignorant of this one thing, that one day is with the LORD as a thousand years, and a thousand years as one day' (2Peter 3:8). 6,000 years compared to the first six days of the Creation Week, while the Millennium (Revelation 20:4) would correspond to the Seventh Day or Sabbath; thus, some have termed it the Sabbath-Millennium Theory. 'And on the seventh day God ended His work which He had made; and He rested on the seventh day from all His work which He had made' (Genesis 2:2)." --from "Be Fruitful And Multiply: World Population Reaches 6 Billion" --

<http://WhatSaithTheScripture.com/Timeline/Be.Fruitful.and.Multiply.html> -- by Tom Stewart.

"8 And God spake unto Noah, and to his sons with him, saying, 9 And I, behold, I establish My Covenant with you, and with your seed after you; 10 And with every living creature that is with you, of the fowl, of the cattle, and of every beast of the Earth with you; from all that go out of the ark, to every beast of the Earth. 11 And I will establish My Covenant with you; neither shall all flesh be cut off any more **by the waters of a flood**; neither shall there any more be **a flood** to destroy the Earth."

God created the Earth. All that was created, God called "very good".

- (Genesis 1:31) "And God saw every thing that He had made, and, behold, it was **very good**. And the evening and the morning were the sixth day."

And all that was created was in harmony **with God**, and functioned in the physical ways God had uniquely designed for each of them. Creation fulfilled the purposes which God had ordained, i.e.,

1. providing much pleasure and enjoyment for Himself, "Thou hast created all things, and for Thy pleasure they are and were created" (Revelation 4:11)., and,
2. providing man with an abundant environment that was complete and wonderful in every way, "28 And God blessed them, and God said unto them, Be fruitful, and multiply, and replenish the Earth, and subdue it: and have dominion over the fish of the sea, and over the fowl of the air, and over every living thing that moveth upon the Earth. 29 And God said, Behold, I have given you every herb bearing seed, which is upon the face of all the Earth, and every tree, in the which is the fruit of a tree yielding seed; to you it shall be for meat. 30 And to every beast of the Earth, and to every fowl of the air, and to every thing that creepeth upon the Earth, wherein there is life, I have given every green herb for meat: and it was so" (Genesis 1:28-30).

The Earth was the highest "good" God could do for man in providing a place for him to live. On this side of Heaven, the Earth shined as the most beautiful "home" ever. It was absolute perfection-- *until man sinned*.

- (Genesis 3:17-19) "17 And unto Adam He said, Because thou hast hearkened unto the voice of thy wife, and hast eaten of the Tree, of which I commanded thee, saying, Thou shalt not eat of it: **cursed is the ground for thy sake**; in sorrow shalt thou eat of it all the days of thy life; 18 **thorns also and thistles** shall it bring forth to thee; and thou shalt eat the herb of the field; 19 in **the sweat of thy face** shalt thou eat bread, till thou return unto the ground; for out of it wast thou taken: for dust thou art, and unto dust shalt thou return."

Mankind is the only puzzle piece in the whole of Creation that is moral in character. Only man was created in God's image, having a free will to understand and choose that which is right in God's sight and that which is evil. "**Abhor** that which is evil; **cleave** to that which is good" (Romans 12:9). **It is ONLY man's wicked choices that FORCE the LORD's hand to mar, and even destroy, the wondrous world He lovingly created.**

- (Genesis 6:7,13) "7 And the LORD said, **I will destroy man whom I have created from the face of the Earth**; both man, and beast, and the creeping thing, and the fowls of the air; for it **repenteth** [or, grieved] Me that I have made them. 13 And God said unto Noah, The **end of all flesh** is come before Me; for **the Earth is filled with violence through them**; and, behold, **I will destroy them with the Earth.**"
- (Jeremiah 21:10) "For I have set My face against this city for evil, and not for good, saith the LORD: it shall be given into the hand of the king of Babylon, and he shall **burn it** with fire."

The LORD **must** judge sin. In fact, "the LORD is **known** by the Judgment which He executeth" (Psalm 9:16).

- (Deuteronomy 6:15) "(For the LORD thy God is a Jealous God among you) lest the anger of the LORD thy God be kindled against thee, and destroy thee from off the face of the Earth."
- (Psalm 76:7) "Thou, even Thou, art to be feared: and who may stand in Thy sight when once Thou art angry?"
- (Ecclesiastes 12:14) "God shall bring every work into Judgment, with every secret thing, whether it be good, or whether it be evil."

Just as the LORD judged sin in Noah's time, so will He judge **again** in our time-- not "by the waters of a flood", but by a "great Tribulation, such as **was not since the beginning of the world to this time, no, nor ever shall be**" (Matthew 24:21) [For more on the soon coming Tribulation, see the section of our website entitled, "Timeline" -- <http://WhatSaithTheScripture.com/WStS.Timeline.html> --].

- (Revelation 11:18) "And the nations were angry, and Thy wrath is come, and the time of the dead, that they should be judged, and that Thou shouldest give reward unto Thy servants the prophets, and to the saints, and them that fear Thy Name, small and great; and shouldest destroy them which destroy the Earth."
- (Daniel 9:13) "All this evil is come upon us: yet made we not our prayer before the LORD our God, **that we might turn** from our iniquities, and understand Thy Truth."
- (Isaiah 26:9) "When Thy Judgments are in the Earth, the inhabitants of the world will learn righteousness."

"12 And God said, This is the **token** of the Covenant which I make between Me and you and every living creature that is with you, for perpetual generations: 13 **I do set My bow in the cloud, and it shall be for a token of a Covenant between Me and the Earth.**"

A covenant is a **two-way** agreement, a contract, made between two or more individuals. A covenant is not just an unconditional promise made by one individual. **ALL** parties in a covenant must uphold their word by performing what each promised. Only then can a covenant be valid. But if one party fails, the covenant is violated and made void.

Everything that science has discovered reveals only a tiny, finite particle of the structure, imagination, and

beauty found in the Infinite Mind of God. In God's Covenant with the Earth, the Earth's part is to be in conformity with God's will and design. The Earth, not being moral, agrees with God because it can do nothing else but agree. The Earth fulfills its obligation to the Covenant made by God through operating in the physical laws God gave it, i.e., gravity, energy, the mechanics and physical properties of all natural phenomena. Scripture reveals the covenant relationship that Creation has with its Creator.

In Creation, the LORD's handiwork is in concert with its Creator.

1. The stones can *cry out His praise*.

- (Luke 19:37-40) "37 And when He was come nigh... the whole multitude of the disciples began to rejoice and praise God with a loud voice for all the mighty works that they had seen; 38 saying, Blessed be the King that cometh in the Name of the LORD: peace in Heaven, and glory in the highest. 39 And some of the Pharisees from among the multitude said unto Him, Master, rebuke Thy disciples. 40 And He answered and said unto them, I tell you that, if these should hold their peace, the stones would immediately cry out."

2. The Earth *helps His people*.

- (1Kings 17:6) "And the ravens brought him [Elijah] bread and flesh in the morning, and bread and flesh in the evening; and he drank of the brook."
- (Revelation 12:16) "And the Earth helped the woman, and the Earth opened her mouth, and swallowed up the flood which the dragon cast out of his mouth."

3. The sea, the fields, and the woods *are in one accord with His plans*.

- (1Chronicles 16:32-33) "Let the sea roar, and the fulness thereof: let the fields rejoice, and all that is therein. Then shall the trees of the wood sing out at the presence of the LORD, because He cometh to judge the Earth."
- (Isaiah 44:23; 49:13) "Sing, O ye heavens; for the LORD hath done it: shout, ye lower parts of the Earth: break forth into singing, ye mountains, O forest, and every tree therein: for the LORD hath redeemed Jacob, and glorified Himself in Israel... Sing, O heavens; and be joyful, O Earth; and break forth into singing, O mountains: for the LORD hath comforted His people, and will have mercy upon His afflicted."

4. The wilderness and hills *rejoice in His bounty*.

- (Psalm 65:11-13) "11 Thou crownest the year with Thy goodness; and Thy paths drop fatness. 12 They drop upon the pastures of the wilderness: and the little hills rejoice on every side. 13 The pastures are clothed with flocks; the valleys also are covered over with corn; they shout for joy, they also sing."

And in Judgment, nature bends under the strain of man's sin *and agrees with "the Judge of All the Earth"* (Genesis 18:25).

- (Jeremiah 12:4,11) "How long shall the land mourn, and the herbs of every field wither, for the wickedness of them that dwell therein? the beasts are consumed, and the birds... they have made it desolate, and being desolate it mourneth unto Me; the whole land is made desolate, because no man layeth it to heart."

- (Romans 8:22) "For we know that the whole creation groaneth and travaileth in pain together until now.

"14 And it shall come to pass, when I bring a cloud over the Earth, that the bow shall be seen in the cloud:
15 And I will remember My Covenant, which is between Me and you and every living creature of all flesh;
and the waters shall no more become a flood to destroy all flesh.

16 And the bow shall be in the cloud; and I will look upon it, that I may remember the Everlasting Covenant between God and every living creature of all flesh that is upon the Earth.

17 And God said unto Noah, This is the token of the Covenant, which I have established between Me and all flesh that is upon the Earth. 18 And the sons of Noah, that went forth of the ark, were Shem, and Ham, and Japheth: and Ham is the father of Canaan. 19 These are the three sons of Noah: and of them was the whole Earth overspread."

The fact that there are three main shapes of skulls which define the races of the world prove that "the three sons of Noah" repopulated the Earth, "and of them was the whole Earth overspread".

Man, being moral, must uphold the Covenant by right moral actions to God's righteous moral Law.
When man breaks God's Law, he proclaims the worthlessness with which he views God's Law. It is not his delight, nor does he respect It anymore than he delights in or respects the One Who authored It.

- (Psalm 28:5) "Because they regard not the works of the LORD, nor the operation of His hands, He shall destroy them, and not build them up."
- (Psalm 66:18) "If I regard iniquity in my heart, the LORD will not hear me."
- (1Samuel 2:30) "Now the LORD saith... them that honour Me I will honour, and they that despise Me shall be lightly esteemed."
- (Romans 1:20-25) "20 For the invisible things of Him from the Creation of the world are clearly seen, being understood by the things that are made, even His Eternal Power and Godhead; so that they are without excuse. 21 Because that, when they knew God, they glorified Him not as God, neither were thankful; but became vain in their imaginations, and their foolish heart was darkened. 22 Professing themselves to be wise, they became fools, 23 and changed the glory of the uncorruptible God into an image made like to corruptible man, and to birds, and fourfooted beasts, and creeping things. 24 Wherefore God also gave them up to uncleanness through the lusts of their own hearts, to dishonour their own bodies between themselves: 25 who changed the Truth of God into a lie, and worshipped and served the creature more than the Creator, Who is blessed for ever. Amen."

If man doesn't regard God or His Law, then he obviously doesn't regard any Covenant offered by God. And when that happens, all contracts are off. [Read "Salvation Always Conditional" by C. G. Finney --

http://WhatSaithTheScripture.com/Voice/Oberlin_1840/OE1840.Salvation.Condition.html --]

- (Hebrews 10:26-27) "For if we **sin wilfully** after that we have received the knowledge of the Truth, there remaineth **no more sacrifice for sins**, but a certain fearful looking for of Judgment and fiery indignation, which shall devour the adversaries."
- (Hebrews 6:4-8) "4 For it is impossible for those who were once **enlightened**, and have **tasted** of the heavenly Gift, and were made **partakers** of the Holy Ghost, 5 and have **tasted** the good Word of God, and the powers of the world to come, 6 if they shall fall away and [and remain in that state], to renew them again unto repentance; seeing they crucify to themselves the Son of God afresh, and put

Him to an open shame. 7 For the Earth which drinketh in the rain that cometh oft upon it, and bringeth forth herbs meet for them by whom it is dressed, receiveth blessing from God: 8 but that which beareth thorns and briers is rejected, and is nigh unto cursing; whose end is to be burned."

- (2Peter 2:20-21) "For if after they have escaped the pollutions of the world through the knowledge of the LORD and Saviour Jesus Christ, they are again entangled therein, and **overcome**, the latter end is **worse** with them than the beginning. For it had been better for them not to have known The Way of Righteousness, than, after they have known It, to turn from the Holy Commandment delivered unto them."
- (Hebrews 10:29, 31, 38) "29 Of how much **sorer** punishment, suppose ye, shall he be thought worthy, who hath trodden under foot the Son of God, and hath counted The Blood of the Covenant, wherewith he was sanctified, an unholy thing, and hath done despite unto the Spirit of grace?... 31 It is a fearful thing to fall into the hands of the Living God... 38 Now the just shall live by FAITH: but if any man draw back, My soul shall have **no** pleasure in him."

When the people of the Earth are so completely evil, and God sees "that the wickedness of man [is] great in the Earth, and that every imagination of the thoughts of his heart [is] only evil continually", then "it repent[s] the LORD that He had made man on the Earth, and it grieve[s] Him at His heart." Judgment **must** follow. God is Faithful, and requires His people to be full of FAITH. "The Father seeketh such to worship Him" (John 4:23).

Side Note Number 3: Tom Stewart-- "Solomon's prayer... indicates the understanding that Israel's godly king possessed of the character of God... 'There is no God like Thee, in Heaven above, or on Earth beneath, Who keepest covenant [i.e., performs His agreement or contract] and mercy with Thy servants that walk before Thee with **all** their heart' (1Kings 8:23). Whatever else that could be said of the Living God, Solomon knew that *Jehovah keeps His Word*, which binds Him to the Saints with an ironclad covenant. 'Know therefore that the LORD thy God, He is God, the Faithful God, which keepeth covenant [Hebrew, berith] and mercy **with them that love Him and KEEP His Commandments** to a thousand generations' (Deuteronomy 7:9). Of course, *all that remains, is for man to be correspondingly faithful at keeping his word to God.*" -
-from "Keeping Covenant" by Tom Stewart.

We have been "warned of God of things not seen as yet".

- (Daniel 12:1) "At that time shall Michael stand up, the great prince which standeth for the children of Thy people: and there shall be a Time of Trouble, such as never was since there was a nation even to that same time: and at that time Thy people shall be delivered, every one that shall be found written in the Book."
- (Joel 2:2) "A day of darkness and of gloominess, a day of clouds and of thick darkness, as the morning spread upon the mountains."
- (Matthew 24:21-22) "For then shall be great Tribulation, such as was not since the beginning of the world to this time, no, nor ever shall be. And except those days should be shortened, there should no flesh be saved: but for the elect's sake those days shall be shortened."
- (Luke 21:35) "For as a snare shall it come on all them that dwell on the face of the whole Earth."

Jesus is the Ark of Salvation for you and those in your house. Trust Him. Let Him draw you inside and allow the Father to shut you in, away from, and above The Judgment.

"By FAITH Noah,
being warned of God of things not seen as yet,
moved with fear, prepared an ark
to the saving of his house;

by the which he condemned the world,
and became heir of the righteousness
which is by FAITH"
(Hebrews 11:7).

For more "Covenant" related material, please read:

Charles G. Finney's lectures in "The Oberlin Evangelist"

-- <http://WhatSaithTheScripture.com/Fellowship/Finney.Oberlin.Evangelist.html> -- , in particular,

"The Promises"

-- http://WhatSaithTheScripture.com/Voice/Oberlin_1839/OE1839.The.Promises.html -- ,

"The Holy Spirit of Promise"

-- http://WhatSaithTheScripture.com/Voice/Oberlin_1839/OE1839.Holy.Spirit.Promise.html -- , and

"The Covenants"

-- http://WhatSaithTheScripture.com/Voice/Oberlin_1839/OE1839.The.Covenants.html --

and

the series
Keeping Covenant

-- <http://WhatSaithTheScripture.com/W.S.t.S.Fellowship.html#Keeping> --

God keeps His Word, and expects the same of us.

"And he said, LORD God of Israel, there is no God like Thee, in Heaven above, or on Earth beneath,
Who keepest covenant and mercy with Thy servants that walk before Thee with all their heart"

(1Kings 8:23).

by Tom Stewart

End of "Noah's Ark"

Elijah and the Prophets of Baal

King James Version by The Holy Spirit
with notes by Katie Stewart

"How long halt ye between two opinions? If the LORD be God, follow Him: but if Baal, then follow him"
(1 Kings 18:21).

by Katie Stewart
9-2-2000

The Book of 1 Kings

Chapter 18:17-40

Chapter 18

"AND IT CAME TO PASS, WHEN AHAB SAW ELIJAH, that Ahab said unto him, Art thou he that troubleth Israel?"

18 And he answered, I have not troubled Israel; but thou, and thy father's house, **in that ye have forsaken the Commandments of the LORD**, and thou hast followed Baalim. 19 Now therefore send, and gather to me ALL Israel unto mount Carmel, and the prophets of Baal four hundred and fifty, and the prophets of the groves four hundred, which eat at Jezebel's table."

When sin becomes the standard for a nation, as it has in our United States, and as well to the world at large, then the land is "troubled". Sin is the pollution which destroys, not only the beautiful environment of God's Creation ("Thou hast polluted the land with thy whoredoms and with thy wickedness" [Jeremiah 3:2].), but more importantly-- sin condemns the soul. Righteousness dwells in the Highest Heaven, and as well, "Righteousness exalteth a nation" (Proverbs 14:34). Loving obedience to the LORD will exalt ANY nation, even down to a solitary person, and exalts to a "higher ground" and Heaven-like resemblance of where God abides.

- (John 14:23) "Jesus answered and said unto him, If a man love Me, **he will keep My Words**: and My Father will love him, and We will come unto him, and make Our abode with him."
- (1John 2:7,24) "Brethren, I write no new commandment unto you, but an Old Commandment which ye had from the beginning. The Old Commandment is the Word which ye have heard from the beginning... Let that therefore abide in you, which ye have heard from the beginning. **If** that which ye have heard from the beginning shall remain in you, ye also shall continue in the Son, and in the Father."

In the Book of Deuteronomy, Moses exhorted his people to keep God's "Statutes and Judgments":

"6 Keep therefore and do them; for this is your wisdom and your understanding in the sight of the nations, which shall hear all these Statutes, and say, Surely this great nation is a wise and understanding people. 7 For what nation is there so great, **who hath God so nigh unto them, as the LORD our God is in all things that we call upon Him for?** 8 And what nation is there so great, that hath Statutes and Judgments so righteous as all this Law, which I set before you this day? 9 Only take heed to thyself, and keep thy soul diligently, lest thou forget the things which thine eyes have seen, and lest they depart from thy heart all the days of thy life: but teach them thy sons, and thy sons' sons" (Deuteronomy 4:6-9).

"But sin is a reproach to ANY people" (Proverbs 14:34). Sin violates everything so completely that even the soul of a man is consumed in an everlasting torment of fire. "10 And the devil that deceived them was cast into the Lake of Fire and Brimstone, where The Beast and The False Prophet are, and shall be **tormented day and night for ever and ever**... 14 And death and hell were cast into the Lake of Fire. This is the second death. 15 And whosoever was not found written in the Book of Life was cast into the Lake of Fire" (Revelation 20:10, 14-15).

- (Genesis 19:24-25) "Then the LORD rained upon Sodom and upon Gomorrah brimstone and fire from the LORD out of heaven; and He overthrew those cities, and all the plain, and all the inhabitants of the cities, and that which grew upon the ground."

- (Deuteronomy 29:23) "And that the whole land thereof is brimstone, and salt, and burning, that it is not sown, nor beareth, nor any grass groweth therein, like the overthrow of Sodom, and Gomorrah, Admah, and Zeboim, which the LORD overthrew in His anger, and in His wrath."
- (Jude 1:7) "Even as Sodom and Gomorrha, and the cities about them in like manner, giving themselves over to fornication, and going after strange flesh, are set forth for an example, suffering the vengeance of ETERNAL FIRE."

God demonstrates in this story of Elijah, that the prophets of Baal-- being the seed of their "father the Devil" (John 8:44), and the ancient fathers of the final and greatest False Prophet of the Book of Revelation-- shall fail their trial by fire, and shall be judged by fire, as are the Devil and ALL of his seed eternally judged. And Elijah's God, The Consuming Fire, "for our God is a Consuming Fire" (Hebrews 12:29), will overthrow the false prophets with an everlasting death, "for the wages of sin is death" (Romans 6:23).

"20 So Ahab sent unto ALL the children of Israel, and gathered the prophets together unto mount Carmel.

21 And Elijah came unto ALL the people, and said,

*How long halt ye between two opinions?
If the LORD be God, follow Him:
but if Baal, then follow him.*

And the people answered him not a word."

Why didn't the people answer Elijah? Why were they speechless? Their muted tongues revealed their empty hearts, "for out of the abundance of the heart the mouth speaketh" (Matthew 12:34). Their action, or inaction, bare witness to their guilt. All of us testify to the whole world, and Heaven above, what lies deep within our hearts, be it good or evil, for "even a child is known by his doings, whether his work be pure, and whether it be right" (Proverbs 20:11). These people had forgotten God for such a long time that they had to have "a sign" to remind them of Who God really was. The LORD Jesus said, that "an evil and adulterous generation seeketh after a sign" (Matthew 12:39). When God's people REFUSE to believe Him unless He gives them "supernatural phenomena"-- they are most certainly backslidden.

- (John 20:24-29) "24 Thomas, one of the twelve, called Didymus, was not with them when Jesus came. 25 The other disciples therefore said unto him, We have seen the LORD. But he said unto them, Except I shall see in His hands the print of the nails, and put my finger into the print of the nails, and thrust my hand into His side, I will NOT believe. 26 And after eight days again His disciples were within, and Thomas with them: then came Jesus, the doors being shut, and stood in the midst, and said, Peace be unto you. 27 Then saith He to Thomas, Reach hither thy finger, and behold My hands; and reach hither thy hand, and thrust it into My side: and **be not faithless, but believing**. 28 And Thomas answered and said unto Him, My LORD and my God. 29 Jesus saith unto him, Thomas, **because thou hast seen Me, thou hast believed: blessed are they that have NOT seen, and yet have believed.**"

FAITH needs no physical evidence, "for we are saved by hope: but hope that is seen is not hope" (Romans 8:24). If professed Christians MUST have physical evidence BEFORE they commit their wills to believing God, then they have no FAITH in God at all. "FAITH is the substance of things hoped for, the evidence of things not seen" (Hebrews 11:1). "FAITH is... substance." The "evidence" CANNOT be seen. True Christians don't Spiritually function by the limits of this physical Earth "(for we walk by FAITH, not by sight:)" (2Corinthians 5:7). We invest our limited time here "looking unto Jesus the Author and Finisher of our FAITH" (Hebrews 12:2). We do not depend upon this world for our future, but only on its Creator. "We look not at the things which are seen, but at the things which are not seen: for the things which are seen are temporal; but

the things which are not seen are Eternal" (2Corinthians 4:18). A religion of the world is evolution, and its god is nature. "Who changed the Truth of God into a lie, and worshipped and served the creature more than the Creator, Who is blessed for ever. Amen." (Romans 1:25). We MUST believe God. It is only His Word that we trust. "I believe God, that it shall be even as it was told me" (Acts 27:25). He is our Life. We MUST BELIEVE Him, "for he that cometh to God MUST BELIEVE that He is" (Hebrews 11:6).

- (Psalm 100:3) "Know ye that the LORD He is God: it is He that hath made us, and not we ourselves; we are His people, and the sheep of His pasture."

Elijah stood before "ALL" his backslidden nation. Sin was their reproach. But the LORD God Almighty, in "wrath remember[ed] mercy" (Habakkuk 3:2). These wayward children of Israel had no excuse. They had a rich history-- as do we-- of just Who exactly God was, is, and always will be. "Unto thee it was showed, that thou mightest KNOW that the LORD He is God; there is none else beside Him" (Deuteronomy 4:35). He is The Great "I AM THAT I AM" (Exodus 3:14).

- (Deuteronomy 7:9) "Know therefore that the LORD thy God, He is God, the Faithful God, which keepeth covenant and mercy with them that love Him and keep His Commandments to a thousand generations."
- (Deuteronomy 10:17) "For the LORD your God is God of gods, and LORD of lords, a great God, a mighty, and a terrible, which regardeth not persons, nor taketh reward."
- (1Kings 8:60) "That all the people of the Earth may know that the LORD is God, and that there is none else."

Elijah's task was to demonstrate to this deceived Israel that God was God-- the Only God! He approached "boldly unto the Throne of Grace, that [he might] obtain mercy, and find grace to help in time of need" (Hebrews 4:16). And it was God's merciful grace that allowed Elijah the opportunity to challenge the people to a trial by fire.

- (Joshua 24:14-24) "14 Now therefore fear the LORD, and serve Him in sincerity and in Truth: and put away the gods which your fathers served on the other side of the flood, and in Egypt; and serve ye the LORD. 15 And if it seem evil unto you to serve the LORD, **choose you this day whom ye will serve;** whether the gods which your fathers served that were on the other side of the flood, or the gods of the Amorites, in whose land ye dwell: but **as for me and my house, we will serve the LORD.** 16 And the people answered and said, God forbid that we should forsake the LORD, to serve other gods; 17 For the LORD our God, He it is that brought us up and our fathers out of the land of Egypt, from the house of bondage, and which did those great signs in our sight, and preserved us in all the way wherein we went, and among all the people through whom we passed: 18 And the LORD drave out from before us all the people, even the Amorites which dwelt in the land: therefore will we also serve the LORD; for He is our God. 19 And Joshua said unto the people, **Ye CANNOT serve the LORD: for He is an Holy God; He is a Jealous God; He will NOT FORGIVE your transgressions nor your sins.** 20 **If ye FORSAKE the LORD, and SERVE strange gods, then He will turn and do you hurt, and consume you, after that He hath done you good.** 21 And the people said unto Joshua, Nay; but we will serve the LORD. 22 And Joshua said unto the people, Ye are witnesses against yourselves that ye have chosen you the LORD, to serve Him. And they said, We are witnesses. 23 Now therefore put away, said he, the strange gods which are among you, and incline your heart unto the LORD God of Israel. 24 And the people said unto Joshua, The LORD our God will we **SERVE,** and His Voice will we **OBEY.**"

It is **impossible** to serve the LORD and serve any other god/sin at the same time. [See our article "The Beauty of

- (Matthew 6:24) "No man can serve two masters: for either he will hate the One, and love the other; or else he will hold to the One, and despise the other. Ye cannot serve God and mammon." [Also, please see "Topical Links on Sound Doctrine" -- <http://WhatSaithTheScripture.com/Fellowship/Topical.Links.On.Doctrine.html> --.]

"22 Then said Elijah unto the people, I, even I only, remain a prophet of the LORD; but Baal's prophets are four hundred and fifty men."

Remember, there were "the prophets of Baal four hundred and fifty, **and** the prophets of the groves four hundred, which eat at Jezebel's table." A total of 850 prophets stood against God and Elijah. And, just humanly speaking, Elijah stood alone, "for it was so, when Jezebel cut off the prophets of the LORD, that Obadiah took an hundred prophets, and hid them by fifty in a cave, and fed them with bread and water" (1Kings 18:4). There was a great host opposing Elijah:

1. 850 false prophets who haughtily avowed that Elijah was a liar, and flaunted their god disdainfully in his face.
2. Ahab and Jezebel, the polluting king and queen which "troubleth" the land and people by their uncleanness, and had even conspired Elijah's death (1Kings 19:2). And,
3. an idol-worshipping people, a nation fallen from grace, defying Elijah and his LORD.

Yet still, this servant of the LORD "resist[ed] stedfast in the FAITH" (1Peter 5:9) and drew the lines of battle. Elijah disregarded the odds, their faces, and even the physical laws of nature (as we shall see later). The LORD told Jeremiah, another of His prophets of renown, "Thou therefore gird up thy loins, and arise, and speak unto them all that I command thee: be not dismayed at their faces, lest I confound thee before them... they shall not prevail against thee; for I AM with thee, saith the LORD, to deliver thee" (Jeremiah 1:17,19). True to his calling, Elijah laid before them the challenge.

"23 Let them therefore give us two bullocks; and let them choose one bullock for themselves, and cut it in pieces, and lay it on wood, and put no fire under: and I will dress the other bullock, and lay it on wood, and put no fire under: 24 and call ye on the name of your gods, and I will call on the Name of the LORD: **and the God that answereth by fire, let him be God**. And ALL the people answered and said, It is well spoken."

Notice that it wasn't the false prophets that agreed to the challenge. It was "ALL the people" that agreed.

"25 And Elijah said unto the prophets of Baal, Choose you one bullock for yourselves, and dress it first; for ye are many; and call on the name of your gods, but put no fire under.

26 And they took the bullock which was given them, and they dressed it, and called on the name of Baal from morning even until noon, saying, O Baal, hear us. But there was no voice, nor any that answered. And they leaped upon the altar which was made."

Some of the false prophets already knew that they could not refute the Real God, and that this test was against them. After all, were they not "of [their] father the Devil... a liar" (John 8:44), and did they not lie to the people as he did? And other of the false prophets might have been so deceived as to have actually believed they would win this derision by their dead stone gods. Satan believes he will have mastery over the ALMIGHTY! "Evil men and seducers shall wax worse and worse, deceiving, and being deceived" (2Timothy 3:13).

"27 And it came to pass at noon, that Elijah mocked them, and said, Cry aloud: for he is a god; either he is talking, or he is pursuing, or he is in a journey, or peradventure he sleepeth, and must be awaked."

Elijah's taunting was meant to spur the liar's onward in their face-saving, and even lifesaving, show of desperation. They knew that it wasn't just their gods that were put on trial here. The king and queen could easily decide that they weren't worthy of life any longer. They had been outmaneuvered by Elijah. "ALL the children of Israel" were the spectators, and Elijah was on a mission to demonstrate the power of God to a foolish and backwards people.

The first thing that needed to be done, was to let the liars do their very best in proving their gods. Ultimate Authority would be advanced, if the people could witness the false prophets reaching their unrestricted limits of so-called intercession. Elijah wanted their esteemed men of religion to exhibit their powerlessness as a show for all to see; that they had thoroughly exhausted their methods in proving even the mere existence of their contrived gods, let alone ANY ability of their gods to hear or answer in this trial by fire. Israel had long "tempted and provoked the Most High God, and kept not His Testimonies: but turned back, and dealt unfaithfully... for they provoked Him to anger with their high places, and moved Him to jealousy with their graven images" (Psalm 78:56-58). And "Ahab did more to provoke the LORD God of Israel to anger than all the kings of Israel that were before him" (1Kings 16:33). So Elijah meant to do some "provoking" himself, "to provoke [Israel] unto **love** and to **good** works" (Hebrews 10:24).

"28 And they cried aloud, and cut themselves after their manner with knives and lancets, till the blood gushed out upon them. 29 And it came to pass, when midday was past, and they prophesied until the time of the offering of the **evening** sacrifice, that there was neither voice, nor any to answer, nor any that regarded."

Totally expended from a full day's worth of exercised prostration and verbal exhortation to nonexistent gods, the false prophets had finally come to the inevitable conclusion of their tragedy. They had given the contest the absolute all that they could have given- even to the letting of their own blood. They had nothing left, but life itself, and that they did not offer. But Jesus did. Our LORD not only offered, but willingly gave even His own Pure and Sinless Life as Our Sacrifice.

"Who for the joy that was set before Him endured the Cross, despising the shame, and is set down at the right hand of the Throne of God. For consider Him that endured **such contradiction of sinners against Himself**, lest ye be wearied and faint in your minds. Ye have not yet resisted unto blood, striving **against sin**" (Hebrews 12:2-4).

(Please see "Topical Links on Salvation" -- <http://WhatSaithTheScripture.com/Jehovah/Topical.Links.Salvation.html> --.)

Elijah had "allowed" the deceivers the opportunity to go first. They could have won with the first strike. They had held the stage all day. But, they had miserably failed before "ALL the people". It is now Elijah's turn. He has been waiting, watching, and praying. He has "staggered not at the Promise of God through unbelief; but was strong in faith" (Romans 4:20) that he wouldn't ruin this Providential opportunity in "**giving glory to God**" (4:20). His FAITH in God's ability and willingness to answer him in front of this nation of doubters and traitors, held "fast the confidence and the rejoicing of the hope firm unto the end" (Hebrews 3:6).

"30 And Elijah said unto ALL the people,

Come near unto me.

And ALL the people came near unto him."

Elijah has been very vocal in his convictions. His motives have been of the highest order, that he would "do

all **to the glory** of God" (1Corinthians 10:31). With this man, Elijah, in this pure moment of Truth, it's not a matter of himself being at risk-- his reputation, or even his life. It's not an issue with him that he is presently "on the line" of battle. Elijah is representing God to the people. He places God "on the line". God leads this charge. This is God's Divine reputation being defended. This will be God's victory, or God's defeat. This must NOT be a demonstration of power from a mere man. NO! For "thus saith the LORD; Cursed be the man that trusteth in man, and maketh flesh his arm, and whose heart departeth from the LORD" (Jeremiah 17:5). No, Elijah must put God in the forefront. The vanguard must be God's alone, that "all this assembly shall know that... the battle is the LORD's" (1Samuel 17:4).

- (2Chronicles 14:11) "O LORD, Thou art our God; **let not man prevail against THEE.**"
- (2Chronicles 20:15) "The battle is NOT yours, but God's."
- (Hosea 1:7) "But I will have mercy... and will save them **by the LORD their God.**"

"ALL" of Israel watches, as Elijah beckons "ALL" the people, "'Come **near** unto me', so that you can see clearly and completely everything that God is about to execute. For the LORD GOD ALMIGHTY says, 'I Am the LORD: I will speak, and the Word that I shall speak shall come to pass; it shall be no more prolonged: for in your days, O rebellious house, will I say the Word, and will perform it, saith the LORD GOD' (Ezekiel 12:25)."

Elijah has successfully put God on trial. Jehovah knows, and is pleased with, the FAITH Elijah has in Him, and with Elijah's motives of love and reverence in proving His Divine Self to His "chosen... special people" (Deuteronomy 7:6) who have so mired themselves in sin. Jehovah knows, and He will not confound His servant. "He that believeth on Him shall not be confounded" (1Peter 2:6).

Elijah continues in FAITH.

"And he repaired the altar of the LORD that was broken down. 31 And Elijah took twelve stones, according to the number of the tribes of the sons of Jacob, unto whom the Word of the LORD came, saying, Israel shall be thy name: 32 and with the stones he built an altar in the Name of the LORD:"

Notice that Elijah sanctified the offering by sacrificing it upon the LORD's altar-- not the enemies'. For "what concord hath Christ with Belial? or what part hath he that believeth with an infidel? And what agreement hath the Temple of God with idols? for ye are the Temple of **The Living God**; as God hath said, I will **dwell in** them, and **walk in** them; and I will be their God, and they shall be My people. Wherefore **come out from among them**, and **be ye separate**, saith the LORD, and **touch not the unclean thing**; and I will receive you, and will be a Father unto you, and ye shall be My sons and daughters, saith **The LORD Almighty**. Having therefore these Promises, dearly beloved, let us cleanse ourselves from ALL filthiness of the flesh and spirit, perfecting holiness in the fear of God" (2Corinthians 6:15-7:1). (Please read "An Urgent Call to Christian Perfection -An Exposition of the Doctrine of Christian Perfection" --

<http://WhatSaithTheScripture.com/Fellowship/Exposition.Perfection.html> --.)

Elijah continues in FAITH.

"and he made a trench about the altar, as great as would contain two measures of seed."

Putting "a **trench** about the altar" was an extra dimension of difficulty not required by, nor even slightly expected of, the enemy. Elijah's FAITH in God was the only standard for this test, and he was "full of FAITH and power" (Acts 6:8) and ready to do "great wonders and miracles among the people" (6:8). It took a "great boldness in the FAITH" (1Timothy 3:13) to carry through this demonstration, but "the LORD God of

Israel saith... them that honour Me I will honour" (1Samuel 2:30). Elijah's strength was that he DID KNOW his God, and he TOTALLY TRUSTED in Him, for the answer to come. "For the LORD GOD **will** help me; therefore shall I NOT be confounded: therefore have I set my face like a flint, and I **know** that I shall not be ashamed" (Isaiah 50:7). Elijah and Timothy, of the New Testament, Eternally agree:

"For the which cause I also suffer these things: nevertheless I am not ashamed: for I **KNOW** Whom I have believed, and am **PERSUADED** that He is able to keep that which I have committed unto Him against that day" (2Timothy 1:12).

- (Matthew 15:28)"Jesus answered and said... Great is thy FAITH: be it unto thee even as thou wilt."

Elijah continues in FAITH.

"33 And he put the wood in order, and cut the bullock in pieces, and laid him on the wood, and said,

Fill four barrels with water, and pour it ON the burnt sacrifice, and ON the wood."

Here again, Elijah's FAITH demands that his success in the trial appears impossible in the eyes of the people.

- (Matthew 19:26) "Jesus beheld them, and said unto them, With men this is impossible; but with God all things are possible."

Elijah's objective was to set the battleground for God to magnify His Power in the most dramatic and miraculous display divinely possible. Elijah wanted God to prove Himself to these disbelieving people, in much the same way as did Samuel, when Israel desired a human king whom they could see with their eyes instead of their Divine King, with which only pure hearts of FAITH could see.

- (1Samuel 12:16-20, 23-25) "16 Now therefore **stand and see this great thing, which the LORD will do before your eyes...** 17 Is it not wheat harvest to day? **I will call unto the LORD, and He shall send thunder and rain; that ye may perceive and see that your wickedness is great**, which ye have done in the sight of the LORD, in asking you a king. 18 So Samuel called unto the LORD; and the LORD sent thunder and rain that day: and **all the people greatly feared the LORD** and Samuel. 19 And all the people said unto Samuel, Pray for thy servants unto the LORD thy God, that we die not: for we have added unto all our sins this evil, to ask us a king. 20 And Samuel said unto the people, Fear not: ye have done all this wickedness: yet **TURN NOT ASIDE** from following the LORD, but serve the LORD with **ALL YOUR HEART...** 23 **I will teach you the Good and the Right Way:** 24 Only fear the LORD, and serve Him in Truth with **ALL** your heart; for consider how great things He hath done for you. 25 But if ye shall still do wickedly, ye shall be consumed, both ye and your king."

God was absolutely real to Elijah, and he wanted his beloved, but backward, nation to see with their eyes Who they refused to see with their hearts. So, he conspired to build a case for God that would multiply his own FAITH to be shared with that of his neighbors. "For therein is the righteousness of God revealed from FAITH to FAITH: as it is written, The just shall live by FAITH" (Romans 1:17). Many times, Elijah must have "upbraided them with their unbelief and hardness of heart, because they believed not" (Mark 16:14). They were religiously scornful-- which, if entertained for a long period of time, makes for the hardest of all sinners. "For it had been better for them **not** to have known the Way of Righteousness, than, after they have known it, to turn from the Holy Commandment delivered unto them" (2Peter 2:21). Elijah was well aware that his people had "eyes to see, and see not... ears to hear, and hear not: for they are a rebellious house" (Ezekiel 12:2). His testimony and exhortations had failed, and had led him to this confrontation where he now faced ALL of them.

- (John 4:44) "Jesus himself testified, that a prophet hath no honour in his own country."

So, since they refused to believe without a sign, Elijah was going to make positively sure that this sign from "the Only True God" (John 17:3) would be such "that they might know" (7:3) Him without doubt. Therefore, making the ordeal even more unimaginable to human reason and sight, Elijah resolutely engages in combat and continues in FAITH...

"34 And he said,

Do it the SECOND time.

And they did it the second time. And he said,

Do it the THIRD time.

And they did it the third time. 35 And the water ran round about the altar; and he FILLED the trench also with water. 36 And it came to pass at the time of the offering of the evening sacrifice, that Elijah the prophet came near, and said,

LORD God of Abraham, Isaac, and of Israel, let it be known this day that

THOU ART GOD in Israel,

and that I am Thy servant, and that I have done all these things at Thy Word.

*37 Hear me, O LORD, hear me,
THAT THIS PEOPLE MAY KNOW THAT*

THOU ART THE LORD GOD,

and that Thou hast turned their heart back again."

- (1John 5:14) "And this is the confidence that we have **in Him**, that, if we ask any thing according to **His will, He heareth** us."

The more impossible a situation seems to our sight the better the opportunity for God to work through our FAITH, "for with God NOTHING shall be impossible" (Luke 1:37). Our finiteness gives abundantly, the favorable occasions to prove His Infiniteness. Our limitations implore His Boundlessness. "HE MUST INCREASE, but i must decrease" (John 3:30). It is **only** when we have FAITH in God's Mastery, that our helplessness extols Him. "Why art thou cast down, O my soul? and why art thou disquieted in me? hope thou in God: for I shall yet praise Him for the help of His countenance" (Psalm 42:5). "Alleluia: for the LORD God Omnipotent reigneth" (Revelation 19:6).

- (Genesis 18:14) "Is any thing too hard for the LORD? At the time appointed I will return unto thee, according to the time of life, and Sarah shall have a son."
- (Jeremiah 32:17) "Ah LORD GOD! behold, Thou hast made the Heaven and the Earth by Thy Great Power and stretched out arm, and there is nothing too hard for Thee."
- (Matthew 19:26) "But Jesus beheld them, and said unto them, With men this is impossible; but with God ALL things are possible."

"³⁸ Then THE FIRE OF THE LORD FELL, and **CONSUMED the burnt sacrifice, and the wood, and the stones, and the dust, and LICKED UP the water** that was in the trench."

God's Power "consumed" the flesh and the wood, the stone altar and even the dirt that it sat upon. And then His Power "licked up" ALL the water that had wholly drenched everything. Nothing was left at the site where the sacrifice was made. **The LORD's answer was a revelation of Himself.** "The LORD thy God is among you, a Mighty God and Terrible" (Deuteronomy 7:21). His response was the same as of old (Exodus 20:2-5), and was adamant in resoluteness.

"² **I Am the LORD thy God...**

³ thou shalt have **NO** other gods before Me.

⁴ Thou shalt not make unto thee any graven image, or any likeness of any thing that is in Heaven above, or that is in the Earth beneath, or that is in the water under the Earth:

⁵ thou shalt **not bow down thyself to them**, nor serve them:

for **I the LORD thy God am a Jealous God,**

visiting the iniquity of the fathers upon the children unto the third and fourth generation of them that hate Me."

If you worship ANYTHING other than God, Scripture pronounces that you "HATE" God. You are either for God, or against God. There is absolutely NO placating His Law.

- (1 Kings 18:21) "And Elijah came unto all the people, and said, How long halt ye between **two** opinions? if the LORD be God, follow Him: but if Baal, then follow him."
- (Galatians 1:10) "For do I now persuade **men, or God?** or do I seek to please men? for if I yet pleased men, I should not be the servant of Christ."
- (James 4:4) "Ye adulterers and adulteresses, know ye not that the friendship of the world is enmity with God? whosoever therefore will be a **friend** of the world is the **enemy** of God."

"I the LORD thy God am a Jealous God." There is no such thing as obeying the LORD halfway.

- (1Chronicles 28:9) "And thou, Solomon my son, know thou the God of thy father, and serve Him with a **perfect heart and with a willing mind**: for the LORD searcheth all hearts, and understandeth all the imaginations of the thoughts: if thou seek Him, He will be found of thee; but if thou forsake Him, he will cast thee off for ever."
- (Mark 12:30) "And thou shalt love the LORD thy God with **all thy heart**, and with **all thy soul**, and with **all thy mind**, and with **all thy strength**: this is the First Commandment."

"³⁹ And when all the people saw it, they fell on their faces: and they said, *The LORD, He is the God; the LORD, He is the God.*"

So Elijah's mission was fulfilled. His FAITH had been tested, and his Faithful God had rewarded him. He is a Rewarder of them that diligently seek Him" (Hebrews 11:6). God's people had returned to the congregation of the Living, as "true worshippers" (John 4:23) to "worship the Father in Spirit and in Truth: for the Father seeketh such to worship Him" (23).

- (Philippians 3:3) "Worship God in the Spirit, and rejoice in Christ Jesus, and have NO confidence in the flesh."
- (Proverbs 21:16) "The man that wandereth out of The Way of Understanding shall remain in the congregation of the dead."

And with his thorough victory, Elijah-- as God's own judge-- now vanquishes the enemies of God to reinstate The Way of Holiness.

"40 And Elijah said unto them,

*Take the prophets of Baal;
let NOT ONE of them escape.*

And they took them: and Elijah brought them down to the brook Kishon, and slew them there."

- (Deuteronomy 25:1) "If there be a controversy between men, and they come unto judgment, that the judges may judge them; then they shall justify the righteous, and condemn the wicked."
- (Ezekiel 44:23,24) "And they shall teach My people the difference between the holy and profane, and cause them to discern between the unclean and the clean. And in controversy they shall stand in judgment; and they shall judge it according to My judgments."
- (1Kings 8:32) "Then hear Thou in Heaven, and do, and judge Thy servants, condemning the wicked, to bring his way upon his head; and justifying the righteous, to give him according to his righteousness."

Elijah's reward was NOT foremost, that God's people had returned to loving obedience. No, his truest reward was that God Almighty had acted in Truth, as God Almighty would act to anyone who loved Him supremely and trusted Him completely. "Truly God is Good to Israel, even to such as are of a clean heart" (Psalm 73:1). The Great God was his Sweetest Reward! "I Am thy Shield, and thy Exceeding Great Reward" (Genesis 15:1).

- (Psalm 58:11) "Verily there is a Reward for the righteous: verily He is a God that judgeth in the Earth."
- (Isaiah 41:10) "I Am thy God: I will strengthen thee; yea, I will help thee; yea, I will uphold thee with the Right Hand of My righteousness."

This knowledge blessed Elijah, because, he knew that he had PLEASED GOD! What more can any of us desire in this life, than that our FAITH gives our Precious LORD pleasure? What pure joy, "that ye present your bodies a living sacrifice, holy, **acceptable unto God**, which is your reasonable service" (Romans 12:1), and to be "an offering made by [the testings and trials of His refining] fire, for a sweet savour unto the LORD" (Numbers 18:17). There is nothing sweeter, for "without FAITH it is impossible to please Him... He is a Rewarder of them that diligently seek Him" (Hebrews 11:6). And "ye also, as lively stones, are built up a Spiritual house, an holy priesthood, to offer up Spiritual sacrifices, **acceptable to God by Jesus Christ**" (1Peter 2:5).

"We know that an idol is nothing in the world, and that there is none other God but One. For though there be that are called gods, whether in heaven or in Earth, (as there be gods many, and lords many,) but to us there is but One God, the Father, of Whom are all things, and we in Him; and One LORD Jesus Christ, by Whom are all things, and we by Him"

(1Corinthians 8:4-6).

"And this is Life Eternal,
that they might know Thee the **Only True God**,
and Jesus Christ, Whom Thou hast sent"
(John 17:3).

End of "Elijah and the Prophets of Baal"

Paul, The Christian Hero

"Paul, an Apostle of Jesus Christ by the Will of God,
according to the Promise of Life which is in Christ Jesus...
Fight the good fight of FAITH, lay hold on Eternal Life,
whereunto thou art also called,
and hast professed a good profession before many witnesses...
For unto you it is given in the behalf of Christ,
not only to believe on Him, but also to suffer for His sake;
having the same conflict which ye saw in me, and now hear to be in me"
(2Timothy 1:1; 1Timothy 6:12; Philippians 1:29-30).

Taken from the book,
"Heaven: Where It Is, Its Inhabitants, and How to Get There"

by the LORD's faithful servant,
D. L. Moody

-- <http://WhatSaithTheScripture.com/Fellowship/D.L.Moody.html> --

Annotated with "bulleted" Scriptures and reformatting by Katie Stewart
4-3-2001

The way to get to heaven is to be saved through faith in Jesus Christ.

We get salvation as a gift, but we have to work it out, just as if we got a gold mine for a gift.

I do not get a crown by joining the church, or renting a pew.

- (Ephesians 2:8) "For by grace are ye saved through FAITH; and that not of yourselves: it is the Gift of God."
- (Romans 6:23) "The Gift of God is Eternal Life through Jesus Christ our LORD."
- (2 Corinthians 9:15) "Thanks be unto God for His Unspeakable Gift."

- (Ephesians 3:7) "Whereof I was made a minister, according to the Gift of the Grace of God given unto me by the effectual working of His Power."

There was Paul. He won his crown. He had many a hard fight; he met Satan on many a battle-field, and he overcame him and wore the crown. It would take about ten thousand of the average Christians of this day or any other to make one of Paul. When I read the life of that Apostle, I blush for the Christianity of the nineteenth century. It is a weak and sickly thing.

- (1 Corinthians 9:16-17, 19-27) "16 For though I preach the Gospel, I have nothing to glory of: for **necessity** is laid upon me; yea, woe is unto me, if I preach not the Gospel! 17 For if I do this thing **willingly**, I have a reward... 19 For though I be free from all men, yet have **I made myself servant unto all, that I might gain the more**. 20 And unto the Jews I became as a Jew, that I might gain the Jews; to them that are under the Law, as under the Law, that I might gain them that are under the Law; 21 to them that are without Law, as without Law, (being not without Law to God, but under the Law to Christ,) that I might gain them that are without Law. 22 To the weak became I as weak, that I might gain the weak: **I am made all things to all men, that I might by all means save some**. 23 And **this I do for the Gospel's sake**, that I might be partaker thereof with you. 24 Know ye not that they which run in a race run all, but one receiveth the prize? So run, that ye may obtain. 25 And every man that striveth for the mastery is temperate in all things. Now they do it to obtain a corruptible crown; but we an **Incorruptible**. 26 I therefore so run, not as uncertainly; so fight I, not as one that beateth the air: 27 but I keep under my body, and bring it into subjection: lest that by any means, when I have preached to others, I myself should be a castaway."

See what he went through. He five times was scourged. The old Roman custom of scourging was to take the prisoner and bind his wrists together and bend him over in a stooping posture, and the Roman soldier would bring the lash, braided with sharp pieces of steel down upon the bare back of the prisoner and cut him through the skin, so that men sometimes died in the act of being scourged. But Paul says he was scourged five different times. Now if we should get one stripe upon our backs what a whining there would be; there would be forty publishers after us before the sun went down, and they would want to publish our lives, that they could make capital out of them. But Paul says,

"Five times received I forty stripes, save one." [2Corinthians 11:24].

That was nothing for him. Take your stand by his side.

- (1 Timothy 6:12) "Fight the good fight of FAITH, lay hold on Eternal Life, whereunto thou art also called, and hast professed a good profession before many witnesses."
- (1 Timothy 1:19) "Holding FAITH, and a good conscience; which some having put away concerning FAITH have made shipwreck."
- (Matthew. 6:20) "Lay up for yourselves treasures in Heaven."

"Paul, you have been beaten by these Jews four times, and they are going to give you thirty-nine stripes more; what are you going to do after you get out of the difficulty? What are you going to do about it all?"

"Do?" says he. "I will do this one thing; I will press toward the mark for the prize of my high calling [Philippians 3:14]; I am on my way to get my crown."

He was not going to lose his crown.

"Don't think that a few stripes will turn me away; these light afflictions are nothing."

- (2 Corinthians 4:17) "For our light affliction, which is but for a moment, worketh for us a far more exceeding and eternal weight of glory."

And so they put on thirty-nine more stripes.

He had sprung into the race for Christ, as it were, and was leaping toward heaven. If you will allow me the expression, the devil got his match when he met Paul. He never switched off to a side-track. He never sat down to write a letter to defend himself. All the strength that he had he gave to Christ. He never gave a particle to the world nor to himself to defend himself.

"This one thing I do," [Philippians 3:13] he said, "I am not going to lose the crown."

See that no man take your crown.

- (Revelation 3:11) "Behold, I come quickly: **hold that fast** which thou hast, that no man take thy Crown."

"Thrice beaten with rods." [2 Corinthians 11:25]

Take your stand again beside him.

"Now, Paul, they have beaten you twice, and they are going to beat you again. What are you going to do? Are you going to continue preaching? If you are, let me give you a little advice. Now, don't be quite so radical; be a little more conservative; just use a little finer language, and, so to speak, cover up the cross with beautiful words and flowery sentences, and tell men that they are pretty good after all; that they are not so bad, and try and pacify the Jews; make friends with them, and get in with the world, and the world will think more of you. Don't be so earnest; don't be so radical, Paul; now come, take our advice. What are you going to do?"

"Do?" he says, "I do this one thing--I press toward the mark of the prize of my high calling." [Philippians 3:14].

So they put on the rods, and every blow lifts him nearer God.

Take your stand with him again. They begin to stone him. That is the way they killed those who did not preach to suit them.

It seems as if he was about to be paid back in his own coin, for when Stephen was stoned to death, Paul, then known as Saul, cheered on the crowd.

"Now, Paul, this is growing serious; hadn't you better take back some of the things you have said about Jesus? What are you going to do?"

"Do?" he says, "if they take my life I will only get my crown the sooner."

He would not budge an inch. He had something that the world could not give; he had something it could not take away; he had eternal life, and he had in store a crown of glory.

- (Isaiah 28:5) "In that day shall the LORD of Hosts be for a **Crown of Glory**, and for a **Diadem of Beauty**, unto the residue of His people."
- (Isaiah 62:3) "Thou shalt also be a **Crown of Glory** in the hand of the LORD, and a **Royal Diadem** in the hand of thy God."
- (1 Peter 5:4) "And when the Chief Shepherd shall appear, ye shall receive a **Crown of Glory** that fadeth not away."

THESE LIGHT AFFLICTIONS.

Three times was he shipwrecked; a day and a night in the deep. Look at that mighty apostle, a whole day and night in the deep. There he was--shipwrecked, and for what? Was it to make money? He was not after money. He was just going from city to city, and town to town, to preach the glorious gospel of Jesus Christ, and to lift up the cross wherever he had opportunity. He went down to Corinth and preached eighteen months, and he didn't have a lot of the leading ministers of Corinth to come on the platform and sit by his side when he preached. There was not a man who stood by him. When he reached Corinth he had none of the leading business men to stand by him and advise him; but the little tent-maker arrives in Corinth a perfect stranger, and the first thing he does is to find a place where he can make a tent; he does not go to a hotel; his means will not allow it; he goes where he can make his bread by the sweat of his brow. Think of that great apostle making a tent, and then getting on the corner of a street and preaching, and perhaps once in a while he would get into a synagogue, but the Jews would turn him out; they did not want to hear him preach anything about Jesus the Crucified.

When I read of the life of such a man, how I blush to think how sickly and dwarfed Christianity is at the present time, and how many hundreds there are who never think of working for the Son of God and honoring Christ.

Yet when he wrote that letter back to Corinth, we find him taking an inventory of some things he had. He is rich, he says,

"In journeyings often, in perils of waters, in perils of robbers, in perils by my own countrymen, in perils by the heathen, in perils in the city, in perils in the wilderness, in perils in the sea, in perils among false brethren." [2 Corinthians 11:26].

This last must have been the hardest of all.

- (1 Thessalonians 2:19) "For what is our hope, or joy, or **Crown of Rejoicing**? Are not even **ye** in the presence of our LORD Jesus Christ at His Coming?"
- (Philippians 4:1) "Therefore, **my brethren**, dearly beloved and longed for, **my joy and crown**, so stand fast in the LORD, my dearly beloved."

"In weariness and painfulness, in watchings often; in hunger and thirst, in fastings often; in cold, in nakedness; and besides those things that are without, the care of all the churches." (II Cor. xi, 26-28.)

These are only some of the things that he summed up. Do you know what made him so exceedingly happy? It was because he believed the Scripture; he believed the Sermon on the Mount. We profess to believe it; we pretend to believe it; but few of us more than half believe it. Listen to one sentence in that sermon: "Rejoice

and be exceeding glad, for great is your reward in heaven," [Matthew 5:12] when you are persecuted. Now persecution was about all that Paul had.

That was his capital, and he had a good deal of it; he had laid by a good many persecutions, and he was to get a great reward Christ says: "Rejoice and be exceeding glad, for great is your reward in heaven." If Jesus Christ spoke of it as "great" it must be indeed wonderful. We call things great that may look very small to Jesus Christ; and things that look very small to us may look very large to Him. When the great Christ, the Creator of heaven and earth, He who formed the heavens and the earth by His mighty power, when He calls it a great reward, what must it be?

Perhaps some people said to the Apostle to the Gentiles:

"Now, Paul, you are meeting with too much opposition; you are suffering too much."

Hear him reply:

"Our light affliction, which is but for a moment, worketh for us a far more exceeding and eternal weight of glory." [2 Corinthians 4:17].

"Our light affliction," he calls it. We would have called it pretty hard, pretty heavy, would we not?

But he says:

"These light afflictions are nothing; think of the glory before me, and think of the crowning time; think of the reward that is laid up for me. I am on my way; the Righteous Judge will give it to me when the time comes;"

and that is what filled his soul with joy; it was the thought of reward that the Lord had in store for him.

Now, my friends, let us just for a minute think of what Paul accomplished. Think of going out, as it were, among the heathen; the first missionary to preach to these men, who were so full of wickedness, so full of enmity and bitterness, the glorious gospel of Jesus Christ, and to tell them that the man who died outside the walls of the city of Jerusalem the death of a common prisoner, a common felon, in the sight of the world, was the promised Christ; to tell them that they had to believe in that crucified Man in order to enter the kingdom of God. Think of the dark mountain that rose up before him; think of the opposition; think of the bitter persecution, and then think of the trifles in our way.

- (Romans 8:18) "For I [Paul] reckon that the sufferings of this present time are not worthy to be compared with the glory which shall be revealed in us."

SONGS IN PRISON.

But a great many worldly people think Paul's life was a failure. Probably his enemies, when they put him in prison, thought that would silence him; but do you know that I believe to-day Paul thanks God more for prisons, for stripes, for the persecution and opposition that he suffered, than for anything else that happened to him here?

- (2 Corinthians 12:9-10) "And He said unto me, My grace is sufficient for thee: for My Strength is made perfect in weakness. Most gladly therefore will I rather glory in my infirmities, that the Power of Christ may rest upon me. Therefore I take **pleasure** in infirmities, in reproaches, in necessities, in persecutions, in distresses for Christ's sake: for when I am weak, then am I strong."

The very things we do not like are sometimes the very best for us.

Christians probably might not have these glorious Epistles, if Paul had not been thrown into prison. There he took up his pen and wrote letters to the Christians in Galatia, Ephesus, Philippi, Coloss, and to Philemon and Timothy. Look at the two Epistles that he wrote to the Corinthians. How much has been done for the world by these Epistles. What a blessing they have been to the church of God; how great a light they have thrown on many a man's life. But we might not have had those Epistles if it had not been for persecution.

- (Philippians 1:20-30) "20 According to my earnest expectation and my hope, that in nothing I shall be ashamed, but that with all boldness, as always, so now also **Christ shall be magnified in my body, whether it be by life, or by death.** 21 **For to me to live is Christ, and to die is gain.** 22 But if I live in the flesh, this is the fruit of my labour: yet what I shall choose I wot not. 23 For I am in a strait betwixt two, **having a desire to depart, and to be with Christ; which is far better:** 24 Nevertheless to abide in the flesh is **more needful for you.** 25 And having this confidence, I know that I shall abide and continue with you all for your furtherance and joy of faith; 26 that your rejoicing may be **more abundant in Jesus Christ** for me by my coming to you again. 27 Only let your conversation be as it becometh the Gospel of Christ: that whether I come and see you, or else be absent, I may hear of your affairs, that ye stand fast in one spirit, with one mind striving together for the FAITH of the Gospel; 28 and **in nothing terrified by your adversaries:** which is to them an evident token of perdition, but to you of Salvation, and that of God. 29 **For unto you it is given in the behalf of Christ, not only to believe on Him, but also to suffer for His sake;** 30 having **the same conflict which ye saw in me, and now hear to be in me.**"

Perhaps John Bunyan blesses God more to-day for Bedford jail than anything that happened to him. Probably we would not have the Pilgrim's Progress-- <http://WhatSaithTheScripture.com/Stories/Bunyan.Pilgrims.Progress.html> -- if he had not been thrown into that prison. Satan thought he accomplished a great deal when he shut up Bunyan for twelve years and six months; but what a blessing it was to the world; and I believe Paul blesses God to-day for the Philippian jail, and for the imprisonment he suffered in Rome, because it gave him time to write those blessed letters. Talk of Alexander making the world tremble with the tread of his armies, and of Cesar and Napoleon's power, but here is a little tent-maker, who, without an army, turned the world upside down.

Why?

Because God Almighty was with him.

Paul says in one place:

"None of these things move me." (Acts xx, 24.)

They threw him in prison, but it was all the same; it did not move him. When he was at Corinth and Athens preaching, it made no difference. He just "pressed toward the mark of the prize of his high calling." [Philippians 3:14]. If God wanted him to go through prisons to win the prize, it was all the same to him. They put him in prison, but they put the Almighty in with him, and Paul was so linked to Jesus that they could not separate them. He would rather be in prison with Christ than out of prison without Him. He would a thousand times rather be cast into prison with the Son of God and suffer a little persecution for a few days here, than to be living at ease without Him.

- (James 1:12) "Blessed is the man that endureth temptation: for when he is tried, he shall

receive the **Crown of Life**, which the LORD hath promised to them that love Him."

- (Revelation 2:10) "Fear none of those things which thou shalt suffer: behold, the Devil shall cast some of you into prison, that ye may be tried; and ye shall have tribulation ten days: **be thou FAITHful unto death**, and I will give thee a **Crown of Life**."

He heard the cry, "Come over into Macedonia and help us."

- (Acts 16:12) "From thence to Philippi, which is the chief city of that part of Macedonia, and a colony: and we were in that city abiding certain days."

He went over and preached, and the first thing that happened to him was that he was put into the Philippian jail. Now, if he had been as faint-hearted as most of us, he would have been disappointed and cast down. There would have been a great complaint. He would have said: *"This is a strange Providence; whatever brought me here? I thought the Lord called me here; here I am in prison in a strange city; how did I ever get here? How will I ever get out of this place? I have no money; I have no friends; I have no attorney; I have no one to intercede for me, and here I am."*

Paul and Silas were not only in prison, but their feet were made fast in the stocks. There they were, in the inner prison, a dark, cold, damp dungeon. But at midnight the other prisoners heard a strange sound. They had never heard anything like it before. They heard singing. I do not know what song those two imprisoned evangelists sang, but I know one thing, it was not "a doleful sound from the tombs." You know we have a hymn, "Hark, from the tombs a doleful sound." They did not sing that, but the Bible tells us they sang praises. That was a queer place to sing praises, was it not?

- (Acts 16:23-26) "23 And when they had laid many stripes upon them, they cast them into prison, charging the jailor to keep them safely: 24 who, having received such a charge, thrust them into the inner prison, and made their feet fast in the stocks. 25 And at midnight Paul and Silas prayed, and sang praises unto God: and the prisoners heard them. 26 And suddenly there was a great earthquake, so that the foundations of the prison were shaken: and immediately all the doors were opened, and every one's bands were loosed."

I suppose it was time for the evening prayers, and that they had just had their evening prayer and then sang their evening hymn. And God answered their prayers, and the old prison shook, and the chains dropped, and the prison doors were opened. Yes, yes; I have no doubt that in glory he thanks God that he went to jail and that the Philippian jailer became converted.

- (Acts 16:27-34) "27 And the keeper of the prison awaking out of his sleep, and seeing the prison doors open, he drew out his sword, and would have killed himself, supposing that the prisoners had been fled. 28 But Paul cried with a loud voice, saying, Do thyself no harm: for we are all here. 29 Then he called for a light, and sprang in, and came trembling, and fell down before Paul and Silas, 30 and brought them out, and said, Sirs, what must I do to be saved? 31 And they said, Believe on the LORD Jesus Christ, and thou shalt be saved, and thy house. 32 And they spake unto him the Word of the LORD, and to all that were in his house. 33 And he took them the same hour of the night, and washed their stripes; and was baptized, he and all his, straightway. 34 And when he had brought them into his house, he set meat before them, and rejoiced, believing in God with all his house."
- (Romans 10:9) "That if thou shalt confess with thy mouth the LORD Jesus, and shalt believe in thine heart that God hath raised Him from the dead, thou shalt be saved."

SWEPT INTO GLORY.

But look at him at Rome. Nero has signed his death warrant. Take your stand and look at the little man. He is small; in the sight of the world he is contemptible (II Cor. xii, 10); the world frowns upon him. Go to the palace of the king and talk about that criminal-- about Paul-- and you will see a sneer on their countenances.

- (2 Corinthians 12:10) "Therefore I take pleasure in infirmities, in reproaches, in necessities, in persecutions, in distresses for Christ's sake: for when I am weak, then am I strong."

"Oh, he is a fanatic," they say; he has gone mad."

I wish the world was filled with such fanatics. I tell you what we want to-day is a few fanatics like him; men who fear nothing but sin and love no one but God.

- (Philippians 1:6) "Being confident of this very thing, that He which hath begun a Good Work in you **will** perform it until the Day of Jesus Christ."
- (Philippians 2:12-13) "Wherefore, my beloved, as **ye have always obeyed**, not as in my presence only, but now much more in my absence, **work out your own Salvation** with fear and trembling. **For it is God which worketh in you** both to will and to do of His Good Pleasure."

Rome never had such a conqueror within her walls. Rome never had such a mighty man as Paul within her boundaries. Although the world looked down upon him, and perhaps he looked very small and contemptible, yet in the sight of heaven he was the mightiest man who ever trod the streets of Rome. Probably there will never be another one like him traveling those streets. The Son of God walked with him, and the form of the Fourth was with him. But go into that prison; there he is; officials come to him and tell him that Nero has signed his death-warrant. He does not tremble; he is not afraid.

- (1 John 4:18) "There is no fear in Love; but perfect Love casteth out fear: because fear hath torment. He that feareth is not made perfect in Love."

"Paul, are you not sorry you have been so zealous for Christ? It is going to cost you your life; if you had to live it over again, would you give it to Jesus of Nazareth?"

What do you think the old warrior would reply?

- (Romans 8:37) "Nay, in all these things we are more than conquerors through Him that loved us."

See that eye light up as he says:

"If I had ten thousand lives I should give every one of those lives to Christ, and the only regret I have is that I did not commence earlier and serve Him better; the only regret I have now is that I ever lifted my voice against Jesus of Nazareth."

- (Galatians 2:20) "I am crucified with Christ: nevertheless I live; yet not I, but Christ liveth in me: and the life which I now live in the flesh I live by the FAITH of the Son of God, Who loved me, and gave Himself for me."

"But they are going to behead you."

"Well, they may take my head, but the Lord has my heart. I care nothing about my head; the Lord has my heart and has had it for years. They cannot separate me from the Lord, and when my head is taken off, I shall depart to be with Christ, which is far better. [Philippians 1:23]"

And they led him out. I do not know at what hour; perhaps it was early in the morning. There is a tradition tells us that they led him two miles out of the city. Look at the little tent-maker as he goes through the streets of Rome with a firm tread. Look at that giant as he moves through the streets. He is on his way to execution. Take your stand by his side and hear him talk. He is talking of the glory beyond.

He says:

"Henceforth there is laid up for me a crown of righteousness. I shall see the King in His beauty to-night. I have longed to be with Him; I have longed to see Him. This is the day of my crowning."

- (2 Timothy 4:8) "Henceforth there is laid up for me a **Crown of Righteousness**, which the LORD, the Righteous Judge, shall give me at that Day: and not to me only, but unto all them also that love His Appearing."

The world scoffed at him, but he did not heed its scoffing. He had something the world had not; burning within him he had a love and zeal which the world knew nothing about. Ah, the love that Paul had for Jesus Christ! But, oh, the greater love the Lord Jesus had for Paul!

- (Matthew 27:29) "And when they had platted a **Crown of Thorns**, they put it upon His Head, and a reed in His right hand: and they bowed the knee before Him, and mocked Him, saying, Hail, King of the Jews!"

The hour has come. The way they used to behead them in those days was for the prisoner to bend his head, when a Roman soldier took a sword and cut it off. The hour had come, and I seem to see Paul, with a joyful countenance, bending his blessed head, as the soldier's sword comes down and sets his spirit free.

- (Philippians 1:23) "Having a **desire** to depart, and **to be with Christ**; which is FAR better:"

If our eyes could look as Elisha's looked, we might have seen him leap into a chariot of light like Elijah; we would have seen him go sweeping through limitless space.

Look at him now as he mounts higher and higher; look at him, see him move up; up--up--up--ever upward.

Look at him yonder!

See! He is entering now the Eternal City of the glorified saints, the blissful abode of the Savior's redeemed. The prize he so long has sought is at hand. See the gates yonder; how they fly wide open. See the herald angels on the shining battlements of heaven. Hear the glad shout that is passed along, "He is coming! He is coming!" And he goes sweeping through the pearly gates, along the shining way, to the very throne of God, and Christ stands there and says:

"Well done, thou good and faithful servant; enter thou into the joy of thy Lord." {Matthew 25:21}.

- (Psalm 21:2-6) "2 **Thou hast given him his heart's desire**, and hast not withholden the request of his lips. Selah. 3 For Thou preventest him with the blessings of **goodness**: Thou settest a crown of pure gold on his head. 4 He asked **Life** of Thee, and Thou gavest

it him, even length of days **for ever and ever**. 5 His glory is great in Thy Salvation: honour and majesty hast Thou laid upon him. 6 For Thou hast made him most blessed for ever: Thou hast made him exceeding glad with Thy countenance."

Just think of hearing the Master say it. Will not that be enough for everything?

O friends, your turn and mine will come by-and-by, if we are but faithful. Let us see that we do not lose the crown. Let us awake and put on the whole armor of God;

- (Ephesians 6:11,13) "Put on the whole armour of God, that ye may be able to stand against the wiles of the Devil... Wherefore take unto you the whole armour of God, that ye may be able to withstand in the evil day, and having done all, to stand."

let us press into the conflict; it is a glorious privilege; and then to us too, as to the glorified of old, will come that blessed welcome from our glorified Lord:

"Well done, thou good and faithful servant."

"And the things that thou hast heard of me among many witnesses, the same commit thou to FAITHful men, who shall be able to teach others also"

(2 Timothy 2:2)

"Fight the good fight of FAITH,
lay hold on Eternal Life,
whereunto thou art also called,
and hast professed a good profession
before many witnesses.

Laying up in store for themselves
a good foundation
against the time to come,
that they may lay hold on Eternal Life"

(1 Timothy 6:12,19).

End of "Paul, The Christian Hero"

Moses, The Servant of God Part One

Portions from the Pentateuch,
the King James Version by The Holy Spirit through Moses
with notes by Katie Stewart

"And they sing the Song of Moses the servant of God,
and the Song of the Lamb, saying,
Great and marvellous are Thy works, LORD God Almighty;

Just and True are Thy ways, Thou King of Saints"

(Revelation 15:3).

by Katie Stewart

5-11-2001

PART ONE

GENESIS

Chapter 1

In The Beginning God created the heaven and the Earth. 2 And the Earth was without form, and void; and darkness was upon the face of the deep. And the Spirit of God moved upon the face of the waters. 3 And God said, Let there be light: and there was light. 4 And God saw the light, that it was good: and God divided the light from the darkness. 5 And God called the light Day, and the darkness he called Night. And the evening and the morning were the first day."

God Himself called Moses His "servant" many times, and on many occasions, even in the very Last Book of His Word, the Book of Revelation.

"And they sing the Song of Moses **the servant of God**,
and the Song of the Lamb, saying,
Great and marvellous are Thy works, LORD God Almighty;
Just and True are Thy ways, Thou King of Saints"
(Revelation 15:3).

Moses and the Lamb love to sing the same Song. "Great and marvellous are Thy works, LORD God Almighty." And their works on this Earth reflected the depth of FAITH which they had in their Heavenly Father's Will, a "FAITH which worketh by love" (Galatians 5:6). Moses, the creature man, and Jesus, the Creator Incarnate Man, both desiring to "praise the Name of God with a Song, and... magnify Him with thanksgiving" (Psalm 69:30). "Let us exalt His Name together" (Psalm 34:3).

Moses testified to the Truth of God's Word by his faithful recording of it, via the Holy Spirit. "1 That which was from The Beginning, which we have heard, which we have seen with our eyes, which we have looked upon, and our hands have handled, of the Word of Life; 2 (for The Life [Jesus Christ] was manifested, and we have seen it, and bear witness, and show unto you that Eternal Life, which was with the Father, and was manifested unto us;) 3 that which we have seen and heard declare we unto you, that ye also may have fellowship with us: and truly our fellowship is with the Father, and with His Son Jesus Christ" (1John 1:1-3).

As we open the cover of our Bibles and begin to read from the very First Book, the Book of Genesis, we immediately see the faithful servitude of Moses towards his God. As the human tool used in the hand of God to author the first five Books of the Old Testament, called the Pentateuch, Moses had to truly be "the servant of God" (Revelation 15:3). The LORD had to have a man who would trust Him so completely and believe Him so fully as to put on parchment the Record of an event that no human being could have witnessed personally and still credit its veracity as being from God. And this man would need to associate his name and person with it. It is this Record that God's people have lovingly ever after called, "The Creation".

"26 And God said, Let Us make man in Our Image, after Our Likeness: and let them have dominion over the fish of the sea, and over the fowl of the air, and over the cattle, and over all the Earth, and over every creeping thing that creepeth upon the Earth. 27 So **God created man** in His Own Image, in the Image of

God created He him; male and female created He them. 28 And God blessed them, and God said unto them, Be fruitful, and multiply, and replenish the Earth, and subdue it: and have dominion over the fish of the sea, and over the fowl of the air, and over every living thing that moveth upon the Earth. 29 And God said, Behold, I have given you every herb bearing seed, which is upon the face of all the Earth, and every tree, in the which is the fruit of a tree yielding seed; to you it shall be for meat. 30 And to every beast of the Earth, and to every fowl of the air, and to every thing that creepeth upon the Earth, wherein there is life, I have given every green herb for meat: and it was so. 31 And God saw every thing that He had made, and, behold, it was very good. And the evening and the morning were the sixth day. 2:1 Thus the heavens and the Earth were finished, and all the host of them."

It took FAITH to be used of God in this way, and Moses was God's choice. Even today, with all the understanding we have of the world we live in, testifying loudly of the LORD's truly AWESOME Creation, men refuse to give God His due. "The heavens declare the glory of God; and the firmament showeth His handiwork" (Psalm 19:1). So-called science explains away ALL that our eyes behold, ALL manner of life that surrounds us and fills our planet, as being products of their own perverted understanding and origins. "The God and Father of our LORD Jesus Christ, Which is blessed for evermore, knoweth that I lie not" (2Corinthians 11:31). They would rather tout the devices of egotistical presumption than admit the Record of God's faithful servant, Moses. "And God saw every thing that HE HAD MADE, and, behold, it was very good" (Genesis 1:31). Their vain imaginings are a PROOF in themselves, that God's Word is True. "Every man is brutish in his knowledge" (Jeremiah 10:14).

- (Romans 1:18-25) "18 For the wrath of God is revealed from Heaven against all ungodliness and unrighteousness of men, *who hold the Truth in unrighteousness*; 19 because that which may be known of God is manifest in them; **for God hath showed it unto them**. 20 For the invisible things of Him from the Creation of the world **ARE CLEARLY SEEN**, being understood by the things that are made [i.e., MEN], even His Eternal Power and Godhead; so that **THEY ARE WITHOUT EXCUSE**: 21 because that, when they knew God, **they glorified Him not as God, neither were thankful**; but became VAIN in their imaginations, and their foolish heart was darkened. 22 *Professing themselves to be wise, they became fools*, 23 **and changed the glory of the Uncorruptible God into an image made like to corruptible man**, and to birds, and fourfooted beasts, and creeping things. 24 Wherefore God also gave them up to uncleanness through the lusts of their own hearts, to dishonour their own bodies between themselves: 25 **who changed the Truth of God into a lie, and worshipped and served the creature more than the Creator**, Who is BLESSED FOR EVER. Amen."

The more men understand of the Truth, the more inexcusable they are for not obeying it, and the deeper the sin into which they will sink. "For unto whomsoever much is given, of him shall be much required" (Luke 12:48). "This is thy lot, the portion of thy measures from Me, saith the LORD; because thou hast forgotten Me, and trusted in falsehood" (Jeremiah 13:25). **Denying the Truth in the Record that Moses gave us of Creation and of man's "Beginning"** (Genesis 1:1), **has been a foundation for calling God a liar and has led the way to ALL manner of uncleanness**. Notice how the passage above (Romans 1:18-25) continues, in context, with the following reasoning:

(Romans 1:26-32) "26 FOR THIS CAUSE God gave them up unto vile affections: for even their women did change the natural use into that which is against nature: 27 and likewise also the men, leaving the natural use of the woman, burned in their lust one toward another; men with men working that which is unseemly, and receiving in themselves that recompense of their error which was meet.

28 And even as **they did not like to retain God in their knowledge**, God gave them over to a reprobate mind, to do those things which are not convenient; 29 being filled with all unrighteousness, fornication, wickedness, covetousness, maliciousness; full of envy, murder, debate, deceit, malignity; whisperers, 30 backbiters, haters of God, despiteful, proud, boasters, inventors of evil things, disobedient to parents, 31

without understanding, covenantbreakers, without natural affection, implacable, unmerciful:

32 who **knowing** the Judgment of God, that they which commit such things are worthy of death, not only do the same, but have PLEASURE in them that do them."

The denial of Moses' Record of Creation and man's origin has led to our present day sea of reprobation, with men committing all that is abominable in God's sight; "as ye have yielded your members servants to uncleanness and to iniquity unto iniquity" (Romans 6:19). Replacing the Omniscient, Omnipotent Creator with man's invention of evolution as "The Way, The Truth, and The Life" (John 14:16), has left us, today, with a substructure of moral morass which has reached quicksand status, all the while lending credence and respectability to all manner of perversion and deviant behaviors. This is "the time of the end: [when] many shall run to and fro, and knowledge shall be increased" (Daniel 12:4), and yet with all this "knowledge", men do "not like to retain God in their knowledge" (Romans 1:28), and so Judgment **MUST** come. [Please read selections from Prophecy For Your Information (PFYI): "The Tribulation: The Seventieth Week of Daniel" -- <http://WhatSaithTheScripture.com/Prophecy/PFYI.Tribulation.html> -- to understand more of the soon coming Judgment of the Tribulation.]

EXODUS

Chapter 1

And Joseph died, and all his brethren, and all that generation. 7 And the children of Israel were fruitful, and increased abundantly, and multiplied, and waxed exceeding mighty; and the land was filled with them.

8 Now there arose up a new king over Egypt, which knew not Joseph. 9 And he said unto his people, Behold, the people of the children of Israel are more and mightier than we: 10 Come on, let us deal wisely with them; lest they multiply, and it come to pass, that, when there falleth out any war, they join also unto our enemies, and fight against us, and so get them up out of the land.

11 Therefore they did set over them taskmasters to afflict them with their burdens. And they built for Pharaoh treasure cities, Pithom and Raamses. 12 But the more they afflicted them, the more they multiplied and grew. And they were grieved because of the children of Israel. 13 And the Egyptians made the children of Israel to serve with rigour: 14 and they made their lives bitter with hard bondage, in mortar, and in brick, and in all manner of service in the field: all their service, wherein they made them serve, was with rigour.

15 And the king of Egypt spake to the Hebrew midwives, of which the name of the one was Shiprah, and the name of the other Puah: 16 and he said, When ye do the office of a midwife to the Hebrew women, and see them upon the stools; if it be a son, then ye shall kill him: but if it be a daughter, then she shall live. 17 **But the midwives feared God, and did not as the king of Egypt commanded them**, but saved the men children alive... 22 And Pharaoh charged all his people, saying, Every son that is born ye shall cast into the river, and every daughter ye shall save alive."

The midwives refused to obey the king because he had commanded something of them that was not his to command. "7 Render therefore to all their **dues**: tribute to whom tribute is **due**; custom to whom custom; fear to whom fear; honour to whom honour. 8 Owe no man any thing, but to **love one another**: for **he that loveth another hath fulfilled the Law**. 9 For this, Thou shalt not commit adultery, **Thou shalt not kill**, Thou shalt not steal, Thou shalt not bear false witness, Thou shalt not covet; and if there be any other Commandment, it is briefly comprehended in this saying, namely, **Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself**. 10 **Love worketh no ill** to his neighbour: therefore **love is the fulfilling of the Law**" (Romans 13:7-10). We are "to be subject unto the higher powers. For there is no Power but of God" (Romans 13:1), but only if the "higher powers" are "due" the obedience. If we are to obey them, they must rule "for the LORD's sake" (1Peter 2:13), as "unto the LORD, the Most High God, the Possessor of Heaven and Earth" (Genesis

14:22). If they demand of us disobedience to our God-- our love for God overrides their demand. "If ye love Me, keep My Commandments" (John 14:15). The midwives, "Shiphrah, and... Puah", would NOT be intimidated, even by the confrontation of "the king of Egypt". Therefore, "fear not them which kill the body, but are not able to kill the soul: but rather fear Him [God Almighty] which is able to destroy both soul and body in Hell" (Matthew 10:28).

Exodus / Chapter 2

There went a man of the house of Levi, and took to wife a daughter of Levi."

The name of the father of Moses was Amram. The name of his mother was Jochebed. "And Amram took him Jochebed his father's sister to wife; and she bare him Aaron and Moses: and the years of the life of Amram were an hundred and thirty and seven years" (Exodus 6:20).

- (Numbers 26:59) "And the name of Amram's wife was Jochebed, the daughter of Levi, whom her mother bare to Levi in Egypt: and she bare unto Amram Aaron and Moses, and Miriam their sister."

"2 And the woman conceived, and bare a son: and when she saw him that he was a goodly child, she hid him three months. 3 And when she could not longer hide him, she took for him an ark of bulrushes, and daubed it with slime and with pitch, and **put the child therein**; and she laid it in the flags by the river's brink."

It is so truly hard to imagine one's self in this situation. How could a mother bring herself to this point of absolute FAITH in God? Though Jochebed was in a desperate situation in seeking safety for the life of her infant boy, we have reason to believe that the action she chose was NOT performed in desperation. The LORD had prepared His servant. "The preparations of the heart in man, and the answer of the tongue, is from the LORD" (Proverbs 16:1).

1. The people of Israel had been told of the Pharaoh's plan by the Hebrew midwives. "15 And the king of Egypt spake to the Hebrew midwives... 16 and he said, When ye do the office of a midwife to the Hebrew women, and see them upon the stools; if it be a son, then ye shall kill him: but if it be a daughter, then she shall live" (Exodus 1:15-16).

2. Jochebed and Amram had nine months to seek the LORD for their child's double deliverance, all the while being molded and formed themselves by the Creator, "the Author and Finisher of our FAITH" (Hebrews 12:2).

3. These parents had three amazing months of successfully hiding their child! "By FAITH Moses, when he was born, was hid three months of his parents, because they saw he was a proper child; and **they were not afraid** of the king's commandment" (Hebrews 11:23). Only the Providence of God could have guided them to see that kind of triumph. "For of Him, and through Him, and to Him, are all things: to Whom be glory for ever. Amen" (Romans 11:36).

4. The plan that Jochebed had could only have succeeded if God had intervened. Knowing this fact, we must conclude that the plan was revealed to this faithful mother by her All Wise God. Of course, if God was in this with her, then Jochebed could joyfully place her child in this blessed basket, the child He had formed and placed in her bowels. "The LORD that formed me from the womb to be His servant, to bring Jacob again to Him" (Isaiah 49:5).

Yes, this act took strong FAITH. "O woman, great is thy FAITH: be it unto thee even as thou wilt" (Matthew 15:28). But the LORD had prepared His servant for this exact moment. "Righteousness shall go before Him;

and shall set us in the way of His steps" (Psalm 85:13). He gave her His plan, and she had confidence in Him. "Commit thy way unto the LORD; trust also in Him; and He shall bring it to pass" (Psalm 37:5). While making the cradle-ark for her precious baby boy, Jochebed might well have whispered her baby's intercession, certainly included the reminder, that from the danger of an infant being placed alone in the water, he must surely be delivered from a death by drowning. "17 He sent from Above, He took me; **He drew me out of many waters**; 18 He delivered me from my strong enemy, and from them that hated me: for they were too strong for me" (2Samuel 22:17-18). After all, Jochebed's justification in following this extreme exploit was her persuasion that this was truly God's Master Plan to secure the deliverance of her baby's life. "By Thee have I been holden up from the womb" (Psalm 71:6). Jochebed knew God's hand guided her, and we know this also, because "wisdom is justified of her children" (Matthew 11:19).

"4 And his sister stood afar off, to wit what would be done to him. 5 And the daughter of Pharaoh came down to wash herself at the river; and her maidens walked along by the river's side; and when she saw the ark among the flags, she sent her maid to fetch it. 6 And when she had opened it, she saw the child: and, behold, the babe wept. And **she had compassion on him**, and said, This is one of the Hebrews' children. 7 Then said his sister to Pharaoh's daughter, Shall I go and call to thee a nurse of the Hebrew women, that she may nurse the child for thee? 8 And Pharaoh's daughter said to her, Go. And the maid went and called **the child's mother**. 9 And Pharaoh's daughter said unto her, Take this child away, and nurse it for me, and I will give thee thy wages. And the woman took the child, and nursed it. 10 And the child grew, and she brought him unto Pharaoh's daughter, and he became her son. And she called his name Moses: and she said, **Because I drew him out of the water.**"

Scripture records *the reason* for the choice of the infant's name. Based upon the occasion of his being pulled (literally, the Hebrew word "drawn") from "the water", the Word of God reveals *the LORD's willingness to answer a mother's prayer*. "When the time was come about after Hannah had conceived, that she bare a son, and called his name Samuel, saying, Because I have asked him of the LORD" (1Samuel 1:20).

Again, only the Providence of God could have turned man's wrath into this perfection of praise. "Surely the wrath of man shall praise Thee: the remainder of wrath shalt Thou restrain" (Psalm 76:10). The baby's sister, Miriam, followed the ark, ready to offer her mother as a nurse to her own brother. "God is my Strength and Power: And **He maketh my way perfect**" (2Samuel 22:33). Miriam's prayer, while following her baby brother's Divinely protected ark, might have been, "For Thy Name's sake **lead me, and guide me**" (Psalm 31:3). As all intercessory prayer is by its very nature, Miriam's intercessory plea would be what Moses would pray for himself, if he could. "Deliver me out of the mire, and let me not sink: let me be delivered from them that hate me, and **out of the deep waters**" (Psalm 69:14). (Read our article, "Intercession Promises: Casting the Net" -- <http://WhatSaithTheScripture.com/Promises/Intercession.Promises.html> --.)

The LORD preserved Jochebed's maternal influence in her son's life by the truly miraculous deliverance of her baby being sheltered in her homemade ark. It shouldn't surprise those of us who know God's Character, that His Grace would provide for a mother's love to nurture and guard the fruit of her own womb. "9 **Take this child away, and nurse it...** And the woman took the child, and nursed it. 10 **And the child grew...**" (Exodus 2:9-10). The Understanding LORD, Who nurtures and suckles His Own children, answered this mother's plea. He saved the life of her child from certain death many times during the short existence. He allowed the mother and child to bond their God-given and God-preserved relationship by the natural sustenance of milk nourishing the child from his own mother. "Thou art He that took me out of the womb: Thou didst make me hope when I was upon my mother's breasts" (Psalm 22:9). It makes Spiritual sense to assume that this bond would be preserved even longer, thus allowing for the Spiritual training of Moses. "Train up a child in the way he should go: and when he is old, he will not depart from it" (Proverbs 22:6). There is no Biblical proof of accuracy in the popular "Hollywood" account of Moses' early life being devoid of Godly influence. In fact, the Bible Record upholds the Spiritual assertion, that since the mother's rights were honoured and preserved in the child's early development, so could they be preserved even longer.

"Provoke not your children to wrath: but bring them up in the nurture and admonition of the LORD" (Ephesians 6:4). The Scriptures lend much proof that the parents of Moses had the responsibility of raising their son to be "the servant of God" (Revelation 15:13), for this is the job of all Godly parents. "I was cast upon Thee from the womb: Thou art my God from my mother's belly" (Psalm 22:10). Parents are given children from the LORD "that He might seek a Godly seed" (Malachi 2:15).

- (Joshua 24:15) "As for me and my house, we will **serve** the LORD."
- (Genesis 18:19) "For I know him, that he will **command his children and his household** after him, and they shall keep the Way of the LORD, to do Justice and Judgment."
- (Deuteronomy 6:7) "And thou shalt **teach them diligently unto thy children**, and shalt talk of them when thou sittest in thine house, and when thou walkest by the way, and when thou liest down, and when thou risest up."
- (Psalm 78:4-5) "4 We will not hide them from their children, showing to the generation to come the praises of the LORD, and His strength, and His wonderful works that He hath done. 5 For He established a Testimony in Jacob, and appointed a Law in Israel, which He **commanded** our fathers, that they should **make them known to their children**."
- (2Timothy 3:15) "And that from a child thou hast known the Holy Scriptures, which are able to make thee wise unto Salvation through FAITH which is in Christ Jesus."

And considering the kind of man that Moses turned out to be, Godly parents must have contributed to his upbringing. Again, "wisdom is justified of her children" (Matthew 11:19).

"11 And it came to pass in those days, when Moses was grown, that he went out **unto his brethren**, and looked on their burdens: and he spied an Egyptian smiting **an Hebrew, one of his brethren**."

Notice, Moses knew that he was born a Hebrew. Also notice his compassion and sense of justice.

"Therefore all things whatsoever ye would that men should do to you, do ye even so to them: for this is the Law and the prophets" (Matthew 7:12). Someone must have taught Moses what pleased the LORD, for he did "learn to do well; seek Judgment, [and] relieve the oppressed" (Isaiah 1:17).

- (Jeremiah 22:16) "He judged the cause of the poor and needy... was not this to know Me? saith the LORD."
- (Jeremiah 9:24) "But let him that glorieth glory in this, that he understandeth and knoweth Me, that I Am the LORD which exercise Lovingkindness, Judgment, and Righteousness, in the Earth: for in these things I **delight**, saith the LORD."

"12 And he looked this way and that way, and when he saw that there was no man, **he slew the Egyptian**, and hid him in the sand. 13 And when he went out the second day, behold, two men of the Hebrews strove together: and **he said to him that did the wrong, Wherefore smitest thou thy fellow?** 14 And he said, Who made thee a prince and a judge over us? intendest thou to kill me, as thou killedst the Egyptian? And Moses feared, and said, Surely this thing is known. 15 Now when Pharaoh heard this thing, he sought to slay Moses. But Moses fled from the face of Pharaoh, and dwelt in the land of Midian: and he sat down by a well."

Moses tried to be a peacemaker between two of his Hebrew brethren. This is more Scriptural proof that Moses was taught the Ways of God. "Blessed are the peacemakers: for they shall be called the children of

God" (Matthew 5:9). Moses also correctly discerned which of the two men had sinned, for Scripture states clearly that Moses addressed "him that did the wrong", indicating a sensitivity to the leading of the Holy Spirit. "Brethren, if a man be overtaken in a fault, ye which are Spiritual, restore such an one in the spirit of meekness" (Galatians 6:1). As the LORD says by His Own mouth, concerning His servant, Moses-- "Now the man Moses was VERY MEEK, above all the men which were upon the face of the Earth" (Numbers 12:3). Moses felt a necessity to intercede, compelled as a Spiritual man would, because "he that is Spiritual judgeth all things" (1Corinthians 2:15). He was passionate for the oppressed, making him a perfect candidate for the LORD's use in freeing the children of Israel from the grip of Egypt.

The Israelite who snapped back at Moses was angry that Moses had "judged" him, i.e., "Wherefore smitest thou thy fellow?" (Exodus 2:13), and that Moses was interfering where he wasn't wanted, i.e., "Who made thee a prince and a judge over us?" (2:14). The erring Hebrew then lashed out at Moses with an accusation of hate, i.e., "Intendest thou to kill me, as thou killedst the Egyptian?" (2:14). The wicked hate the righteous. This sinning brother had been approached by Moses with the best intentions of love, seeking restoration and peace for him. "19 Brethren, if **any** of you do err from the Truth, and one convert [changes direction, or turns] him; 20 let him know, that he which converteth the sinner from the error of his way shall save a soul from death, and shall hide a multitude of sins" (James 5:19-20). Moses must now "suffer for righteousness' sake" (1Peter 3:14). He realized that his good deed in helping the beaten slave by killing the oppressor is known by this backsliding "brother," and that if others don't already know it also-- they will soon. "14 Surely this thing is known. 15 Now when Pharaoh heard this thing, he sought to slay Moses" (Exodus 2:14-15). Moses has to run. As the Patriarch Joseph said to his erring brothers, "As for you, ye thought evil against me; but God meant it unto good, to bring to pass, as it is this day, to save much people alive" (Genesis 50:20).

- (Hebrews 11:24-27) "24 By FAITH Moses, when he was come to years, refused to be called the son of Pharaoh's daughter; 25 choosing rather to suffer affliction with the people of God, than to enjoy the pleasures of sin for a season; 26 esteeming the reproach of Christ greater riches than the treasures in Egypt: for he had respect unto the recompense of the reward. 27 By FAITH he forsook Egypt, **not fearing the wrath of the king**: for he endured, as seeing Him Who is Invisible."

"The moment that Moses came to years of discretion we read that he 'refused to be called the son of Pharaoh's daughter.' Take that as the starting-point of the life of service. If your circumstances are making it impossible for you to carry out what would otherwise be the will of God, then drop your circumstances as Moses did; it rests with you to do it. Refuse any longer to be called the son of Pharaoh's daughter. You have been in the courts of men; you may have stood high in the favor of the people of this world, and your heirship may look exceedingly brilliant. You must choose whether you will take the heavenly inheritance or the earthly. There comes a point in every man's history when, if he wishes to be a sanctified vessel, meet for the Master's use, he must decide to drop everything that prevents a holy career and a life of perfect service among the people of the Lord. Would the devil be what he is if he did not gild his bullets, and if he did not find something to boast of to offset the glorious attraction of heaven? Of course Pharaoh's court, with all its grandeur, its learning, its talent, its science, its magnificent prospects and possibilities and power, attracts men, and they are drawn into its snare. Moses, the servant of God, calculated well, and he concluded that it would be better to endure the reproach of Christ than to have all the treasures of Egypt. Put the two side by side, the things of the world in one scale-pan, and the things of God in the other, and see which kicks the beam. Make your calculation, and say deliberately, 'I esteem the reproach of Christ greater riches than the treasures of the world.' -- H. W. WEBB-PEPLOE." --from "For Each New Day"

"16 Now the priest of Midian had seven daughters: and they came and drew water, and filled the troughs to water their father's flock. 17 And the shepherds came and drove them away: but Moses stood up and helped them, and watered their flock. 18 And when they came to Reuel their father, he said, How is it that ye are

come so soon to day?

19 And they said, An Egyptian delivered us out of the hand of the shepherds, and also drew water enough for us, and watered the flock.

20 And he said unto his daughters, And where is he? why is it that ye have left the man? call him, that he may eat bread."

Again, we see the Godly character of this man, Moses. "Take My yoke upon you, and learn of Me; for I am Meek and Lowly in heart: and ye shall find rest unto your souls" (Matthew 11:29). His compassion for the weak and the wronged stirs up the groundwork of Righteous Justice and Judgment that had been cultivated in him, equipping this meek man and constraining him to action. He intercedes for the oppressed, i.e., "Moses stood up and helped them, and watered their flock" (Exodus 2:17).

At this point, we must make a detour from the story line, and ask the question, "What is meekness?" We are not looking for a dictionary definition here. We want to know, "What saith the Scripture?" (Romans 4:3).

Very simply put-- **true meekness defends God, not self**. "Great peace have they which **love Thy Law**: and **nothing shall offend them**" (Psalm 119:165). The Godly meek of the Earth defend God's Word. "Receive with meekness the engrafted Word, which is able to save your souls" (James 1:21). The truly meek defend God's Character. "The fruit of the Spirit is love, joy, peace, longsuffering, gentleness, goodness, FAITH, meekness, temperance: against such there is no law" (Galatians 5:22-23). The meek promote God, not self. "Who is a wise man and endued with knowledge among you? let him show out of a good conversation his works with meekness of Wisdom" (James 3:13). And God promotes His meek ones. "Blessed are the meek: for they shall inherit the Earth... the meek shall inherit the Earth; and shall delight themselves in the abundance of peace" (Matthew 5:5; Psalm 37:11). With such a man, a man God Himself called "very meek", i.e., "Now the man Moses was VERY MEEK, above all the men which were upon the face of the Earth" (Numbers 12:3), is it any wonder that, with such a SERVANT as was this man Moses, that God had just the human interface He needed to free a whole nation-- enslaved and beaten-- from the clenched fists of the most powerful nation, at that time, on "the face of the Earth."

From a Biblical perspective, it was Egypt that benefitted from "the famine [which] was over all the face of the Earth" (Genesis 41:56), lasting seven years, in which "all countries came into Egypt to Joseph for to buy corn; because that the famine was so sore in all lands" (Genesis 41:57). The citizenry of Egypt became servants of the monarchy. The revenue of all Egypt went into the coffers of the government.

- (Genesis 47:23-25) "23 Then Joseph said unto the people, Behold, I have bought you this day and your land for Pharaoh: lo, here is seed for you, and ye shall sow the land. 24 And it shall come to pass in the increase, that ye shall give the fifth part unto Pharaoh, and four parts shall be your own, for seed of the field, and for your food, and for them of your households, and for food for your little ones. 25 And they said, Thou hast saved our lives: let us find grace in the sight of my lord, and we will be Pharaoh's servants."

The revenue from the world poured into the financial resources of the Egyptian monarchy. This made Egypt quite imposing by monetary standards. So, by the time "there arose up a new king over Egypt, which knew not Joseph" (Exodus 1:8), this Pharaoh could easily have been recognized as the most powerful ruler in the world. In this light, we are not surprised to find egotism that sets "taskmasters to afflict [the Israelites] with their burdens. And they built for Pharaoh treasure cities, Pithom and Raamses" (Exodus 1:11).

It was this stronghold of wickedness, lying in the grasp of one man-- the King of Egypt-- that must be overcome, if God's people were to be set free. The LORD God needed a man to be His instrument of

righteous Justice and Judgment, compassionate to those mistreated. The man must represent God only-- not himself. The man **MUST** be a meek man-- the meekest man "above all the men which were upon the face of the Earth" (Numbers 12:3). *God chose Moses!*

Continuing with the story narration...

"21 And Moses was content to dwell with the man: and he gave Moses Zipporah his daughter. 22 And she bare him a son, and he called his name Gershom: for he said, I have been a stranger in a strange land."

- (1Chronicles 23:13-15) "13 The sons of Amram; Aaron and Moses... 14 Now concerning Moses the man of God, his sons were named of the tribe of Levi. 15 The sons of Moses were, Gershom, and Eliezer."

"23 And it came to pass in process of time, that the king of Egypt died: and the children of Israel sighed by reason of the bondage, and they cried, and their cry came up unto God by reason of the bondage. 24 And God heard their groaning, and God remembered His Covenant with Abraham, with Isaac, and with Jacob. 25 And God looked upon the children of Israel, and God had respect unto them."

Exodus / Chapter 3

Now Moses kept the flock of Jethro his father in law, the priest of Midian: and he led the flock to the backside of the desert, and came to the mountain of God, even to Horeb. 2 And the Angel of the LORD appeared unto him in a Flame Of Fire out of the midst of a bush: and he looked, and, behold, the bush burned with Fire, and the bush was not consumed. 3 And Moses said, I will now turn aside, and see this great sight, why the bush is not burnt. 4 And when the LORD saw that he turned aside to see, God called unto him out of the midst of the bush, and said, Moses, Moses. And he said, Here am I. 5 And He said, Draw not nigh hither: put off thy shoes from off thy feet, for the place whereon thou standest is holy ground. 6 Moreover He said, I Am the God of thy father, the God of Abraham, the God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob. And Moses hid his face; for he was afraid to look upon God. 7 And the LORD said, I have surely seen the affliction of My people which are in Egypt, and have heard their cry by reason of their taskmasters; for I know their sorrows; 8 And I am come down to deliver them out of the hand of the Egyptians, and to bring them up out of that land unto a good land and a large, unto a land flowing with milk and honey; unto the place of the Canaanites, and the Hittites, and the Amorites, and the Perizzites, and the Hivites, and the Jebusites."

In verse 1, we are told that "Moses kept the flock of Jethro his father in law, the priest of Midian". Many may try to use this verse as an occasion to discredit the Word of God as being inconsistent. In their eyes, God is two-faced. "Why did God honour a man like Moses, who married an unsaved woman, and yet destroyed the Earth by a flood for doing the exact same thing?" In our story of "Noah's Ark" --

http://WhatSaithTheScripture.com/Stories/Stories.of.Faith/Noah_s.Ark.html -- and The Flood, we remember, that in those days:

"It came to pass, when men began to multiply on the face of the Earth, and daughters were born unto them, 2 That the sons of God saw the daughters of men that they were fair; and they took them wives of all which they chose.' The LORD wants us to take special notice of the type of sin that was **the most common** just prior to the world's judgment. 'The sons of God' thought so little of the Almighty that they would actually join themselves *in the most intimate way*, to God's enemies. God's people are NOT to choose their spouses from among the ungodly. We are talking about two separate worlds, with opposite motives, antagonistic values, and NO common ground. Men obey God-- in ALL things-- or they don't. There is no middle ground. There are no shades of gray. There is only Divine Light, or darkness forever."

The passage in Numbers, chapter 12, reveals the LORD's anger, when Miriam and Aaron try to usurp

Moses' authority by claiming he did sinfully wrong in marrying an "Ethiopian woman" (Numbers 12:1). Again, the LORD appeared unprincipled and unjust to those who don't understand. Yes, the LORD defended the actions of Moses. "7 **My servant Moses is not so**, who is **faithful** in all Mine house. 8 With him will I speak mouth to mouth, even apparently, and not in dark speeches; and the similitude of the LORD shall he behold: wherefore then were ye not afraid to speak against **My servant Moses**?" (12:7-8). But, to those of us who trust the LORD God, His Word, and His Character, the LORD's defense of His "faithful... servant Moses" conclusively proves that **Zipporah was NOT an heathen woman**, and that "Jethro his father in law, the priest of Midian" was NOT the priest of a heathen religion.

"The center of the Midianite country, where Moses sojourned, was on the east shore of the Gulf of Akaba, through they roamed far to the north and west. In Moses' day they controlled the rich pasture lands around Sinai. Moses married a Midianite woman, named Zipporah, daughter of Jethro, also called Reuel (18; 3:1). Jethro, as priest of Midian, must have been a ruler. Midianites were descended from Abraham, through Keturah (Genesis 23:2); and must have had traditions of Abraham's God." --from "Halley's Bible Handbook" by Henry H. Halley.

In Exodus 2:18, we are told that the daughters of Jethro "came to Reuel their father".

"Reuel, which means friend of God, seems to have been his personal name, and Jethro, his excellence, to have been his honorary title... After the passage of the Red Sea, which conducted the Israelites into the vicinity of Jethro's country... he rejoiced in the deliverance of the Israelites, [and] offered sacrifices to Jehovah." --from "Davis Dictionary of the Bible" by John D. Davis.

God's opinions are stated clearly when it comes to His people choosing the daughters of the heathen-- and in this case, Midianites included.

"9 Now therefore, behold, the cry of the children of Israel is come unto Me: and I have also seen the oppression wherewith the Egyptians oppress them. 10 Come now therefore, and I will send thee unto Pharaoh, that thou mayest bring forth My people the children of Israel out of Egypt.

11 And Moses said unto God, Who am I, that I should go unto Pharaoh, and that I should bring forth the children of Israel out of Egypt?

12 And He said, Certainly I will be with thee; and this shall be a token unto thee, that I have sent thee: When thou hast brought forth the people out of Egypt, ye shall serve God upon this mountain.

13 And Moses said unto God, Behold, when I come unto the children of Israel, and shall say unto them, The God of your fathers hath sent me unto you; and they shall say to me, What is his name? what shall I say unto them?

14 And God said unto Moses, I AM THAT I AM: and He said, Thus shalt thou say unto the children of Israel, I AM hath sent me unto you.

15 And God said moreover unto Moses, Thus shalt thou say unto the children of Israel, The LORD God of your fathers, the God of Abraham, the God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob, hath sent me unto you: this is my Name for ever, and this is My memorial unto all generations. 16 Go, and gather the elders of Israel together, and say unto them, The LORD God of your fathers, the God of Abraham, of Isaac, and of Jacob, appeared unto me, saying, I have surely visited you, and seen that which is done to you in Egypt: 17 And I have said, I will bring you up out of the affliction of Egypt unto the land of the Canaanites, and the Hittites, and the Amorites, and the Perizzites, and the Hivites, and the Jebusites, unto a land flowing with milk and honey. 18 And they shall hearken to thy voice: and thou shalt come, thou and the elders of Israel, unto the

king of Egypt, and ye shall say unto him, The LORD God of the Hebrews hath met with us: and now let us go, we beseech thee, three days' journey into the wilderness, that we may sacrifice to the LORD our God. 19 And **I am sure that the king of Egypt will not let you go**, no, not by a mighty hand. 20 And **I will stretch out My hand, and smite Egypt with all My Wonders** which I will do in the midst thereof: and **after that he will let you go**. 21 And I will give this people favour in the sight of the Egyptians: and it shall come to pass, that, when ye go, ye shall not go empty: 22 But every woman shall borrow of her neighbour, and of her that sojourneth in her house, jewels of silver, and jewels of gold, and raiment: and ye shall put them upon your sons, and upon your daughters; and ye shall spoil the Egyptians."

Exodus / Chapter 4

And Moses answered and said, But, behold, **they will not believe** me, nor hearken unto my voice: for they will say, The LORD hath not appeared unto thee.

2 And the LORD said unto him, What is that in thine hand?

And he said, A rod.

3 And He said, Cast it on the ground.

And he cast it on the ground, and it became a serpent; and Moses fled from before it.

4 And the LORD said unto Moses, Put forth thine hand, and take it by the tail.

And he put forth his hand, and caught it, and it became a rod in his hand:

5 **that they may believe** that the LORD God of their fathers, the God of Abraham, the God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob, hath appeared unto thee. 6 And the LORD said furthermore unto him, Put now thine hand into thy bosom.

And he put his hand into his bosom: and when he took it out, behold, his hand was leprous as snow.

7 And He said, Put thine hand into thy bosom again.

And he put his hand into his bosom again; and plucked it out of his bosom, and, behold, it was turned again as his other flesh.

8 And it shall come to pass, **if they will not believe thee, neither hearken to the voice of the first Sign, that they will believe the voice of the latter Sign**. 9 And it shall come to pass, **if they will not believe also these two Signs, neither hearken unto thy voice**, that thou shalt take of the water of the river, and pour it upon the dry land: and the water which thou takest out of the river shall become blood upon the dry land."

It is a wicked people that need a Sign BEFORE they say they'll believe the LORD. "38 Then certain of the scribes and of the Pharisees answered, saying, Master, we would see a Sign from Thee. 39 But He answered and said unto them, **An evil and adulterous generation seeketh after a Sign**; and there shall no Sign be given to it, but the Sign of the prophet Jonas: 40 For as Jonas was three days and three nights in the whale's belly; so shall the Son of Man be three days and three nights in the heart of the Earth. 41 The men of Nineveh shall rise in Judgment with this generation, and shall condemn it: because they repented at the preaching of Jonas; and, behold, a Greater than Jonas is here" (Matthew 12:38-41). The "Sign" that the LORD spoke of is given to the wicked because of their need to repent. It is given by God to show that repentance is

necessary. Jonah bore his sin in the belly of the whale-- a Sign from God the Father that he needed to repent. Jesus bore the sin of the world in the belly (or "heart") of the Earth-- a Sign from God the Father that the world needed to repent..

"10 And Moses said unto the LORD, O my LORD, I am not eloquent, neither heretofore, nor since Thou hast spoken unto **Thy servant**: but I am slow of speech, and of a slow tongue. 11 And the LORD said unto him, Who hath made man's mouth? or who maketh the dumb, or deaf, or the seeing, or the blind? have not I the LORD? 12 Now therefore go, and **I will be with thy mouth, and teach thee what thou shalt say.**"

The LORD God always prepares His servants for the work He gives them. He sends them in the Power of His Spirit. "12:11 And when they bring you unto the synagogues, and unto magistrates, and powers, take ye no thought how or what thing ye shall answer, or what ye shall say: 12 for the Holy Ghost shall teach you in the same hour what ye ought to say... 21:14 Settle it therefore in your hearts, not to meditate before what ye shall answer: 15 for I will give you a mouth and wisdom, which all your adversaries shall not be able to gainsay nor resist" (Luke 12:11-12; 21:14-15).

"13 And he said, O my LORD, send, I pray Thee, by the hand of him whom Thou wilt send."

Moses continued to sidestep the LORD's Will by suggesting that "the hand of him", Moses, whom God chose, could choose someone else to go in his stead. And even though the LORD was angry with Moses, God showed His mercy and grace.

"14 And the anger of the LORD was kindled against Moses, and He said, Is not Aaron the Levite thy brother? I know that he can speak well. And also, behold, he cometh forth to meet thee: and when he seeth thee, he will be glad in his heart. 15 And **thou shalt speak unto him, and put words in his mouth: and I will be with thy mouth, and with his mouth**, and will teach you what ye shall do. 16 And he shall be thy spokesman unto the people: and he shall be, even **he shall be to thee instead of a mouth, and thou shalt be to him instead of God.**"

The LORD allowed Aaron to be the mouthpiece of Moses, but Moses was still to be the mouthpiece of God

"17 And thou shalt take this rod in thine hand, wherewith thou shalt do Signs.

18 And Moses went and returned to Jethro his father in law, and said unto him, Let me go, I pray thee, and return unto my brethren which are in Egypt, and see whether they be yet alive. And Jethro said to Moses, Go in peace. 19 And the LORD said unto Moses in Midian, Go, return into Egypt: for **all the men are dead which sought thy life.**"

The LORD prepared the way before His servant, providing for the servant's safety. "All the men are dead which sought thy life."

"20 And Moses took his wife and his sons, and set them upon an ass, and he returned to the land of Egypt: and Moses took the rod of God in his hand. 21 And the LORD said unto Moses, When thou goest to return into Egypt, see that thou do all those Wonders before Pharaoh, which I have put in thine hand: but **I will harden his heart, that he shall not let the people go.**"

Again, the LORD prepared His servant, Moses, by telling him what to expect. Pharaoh was to be the unwilling tool in the hand of God.

- First, God's Power was to unreservedly harden the non-elect heart of Pharaoh.

- Second, God would then send Egypt's Judgments methodically upon them.
- Third, God's Judgments worked to override that God-hardened unwillingness of the Pharaoh, showing the Power of His Divine Will to transcend the stoniest unwillingness of a wicked man, even a wicked king-- redirecting it to desperately change for sheer survival-- thereby accomplishing God's Purposes and showcasing God's Eternal Praise. "Surely the wrath of man shall praise Thee: the remainder of wrath shalt Thou restrain" (Psalm 76:10).

"22 And thou shalt say unto Pharaoh, Thus saith the LORD, Israel is My son, even My firstborn: 23 and I say unto thee, Let My son go, that he may serve Me: and if thou refuse to let him go, behold, I will slay thy son, even thy firstborn.

27 And the LORD said to Aaron, Go into the wilderness to meet Moses. And he went, and met him in the mount of God, and kissed him. 28 And Moses told Aaron all the Words of the LORD Who had sent him, and all the Signs which He had commanded him. 29 And Moses and Aaron went and gathered together all the elders of the children of Israel: 30 And Aaron spake all the Words which the LORD had spoken unto Moses, and did the Signs in the sight of the people. 31 And the people believed: and when they heard that the LORD had visited the children of Israel, and that He had looked upon their affliction, then they bowed their heads and worshipped."

Exodus / Chapter 5

And afterward Moses and Aaron went in, and told Pharaoh, Thus saith the LORD God of Israel, Let My people go, that they may hold a feast unto Me in the wilderness. 2 And Pharaoh said, **Who is the LORD, that I should obey His voice** to let Israel go? **I know not the LORD**, neither will I let Israel go."

Truth is Truth, no matter who repeats it. And Pharaoh spoke God's Truth when he said that he didn't know God. For to know God is to obey Him. "Know ye not, that to whom ye yield yourselves servants to obey, his servants ye are to whom ye obey; whether of sin unto death, or of obedience unto Righteousness?" (Romans 6:16).

- (Psalm 10:4) "The wicked, through the pride of his countenance, will not seek after God: God is not in all his thoughts."
- (Psalm 14:1) "The fool hath said in his heart, There is no God. They are corrupt, they have done abominable works."
- (1Samuel 2:12) "Now the sons of Eli were sons of Belial; they knew not the LORD."

"3 And they said, The God of the Hebrews hath met with us: let us go, we pray thee, three days' journey into the desert, and sacrifice unto the LORD our God; lest He fall upon us with pestilence, or with the sword.

4 And the king of Egypt said unto them, Wherefore do ye, Moses and Aaron, let the people from their works? get you unto your burdens. 5 And Pharaoh said, Behold, the people of the land now are many, and ye make them rest from their burdens. 6 And Pharaoh commanded the same day the taskmasters of the people, and their officers, saying, 7 Ye shall no more give the people straw to make brick, as heretofore: let them go and gather straw for themselves. 8 And the tale of the bricks, which they did make heretofore, ye shall lay upon them; ye shall not diminish ought thereof: for they be idle; therefore they cry, saying, Let us go and sacrifice to our God. 9 Let there more work be laid upon the men, that they may labour therein; and let them not regard **vain** words."

To the wicked, the Word of God is foolishness, and the teaching of the Word-- worthlessness. "Let them not regard **vain** words." It is only the Word of God that has Eternal Value.

- (Joshua 1:8) "This Book of the Law shall not depart out of thy mouth; but thou shalt meditate therein day and night, that thou mayest observe to do according to ALL that is written therein: for then thou shalt make thy way **prosperous**, and then thou shalt have **good success**."
- (Matthew 24:35) "Heaven and Earth shall pass away, but My Words shall not pass away."

"20 And they met Moses and Aaron, who stood in the way, as they came forth from Pharaoh: 21 and they said unto them, The LORD look upon you, and judge; because ye have made our savour to be abhorred in the eyes of Pharaoh, and in the eyes of his servants, to put a sword in their hand to slay us.

22 And Moses returned unto the LORD, and said, LORD, wherefore hast Thou so evil entreated this people? why is it that Thou hast sent me? 23 For since I came to Pharaoh to speak in Thy Name, he hath done evil to this people; neither hast Thou delivered Thy people at all."

If there was one character area that Moses needed to heed as "the sin which doth so easily beset" (Hebrews 12:1) him, it would be that of having patience. Then Moses would "run with patience the race that is set before [him]" (12:1).

- (Luke 21:19) "In your patience possess ye your souls."
- (Hebrews 10:36) "For ye have need of patience, that, after ye have done the Will of God, ye might receive the Promise."
- (Luke 8:15) "But that on the good ground are they, which in an honest and good heart, having heard the Word, keep it, and bring forth fruit with patience."

With the constant backslidings from the Israelites, Moses was OFTEN tested in the area of having patience. "There arose not a prophet since in Israel like unto Moses" (Deuteronomy 34:10). Most of the time, he passed his tests, as any child of God is required to do [read "What the Bible Says About Temptation" -- <http://WhatSaithTheScripture.com/Fellowship/What.Bible.Says.Temptation.html> --]. But we will read later, of a time when Moses lost his temper, and this provocation from the children of Israel caused Moses to NOT enter into the Promised Land.

Exodus / Chapter 6

Then the LORD said unto Moses, Now shalt thou see what I will do to Pharaoh: for with a strong hand shall he let them go, and with a strong hand shall he drive them out of his land. 2 And God spake unto Moses, and said unto him, I Am the LORD: 3 And I appeared unto Abraham, unto Isaac, and unto Jacob, by the Name of God Almighty, but by My Name JEHOVAH was I not known to them. 4 And I have also established My Covenant with them, to give them the land of Canaan, the land of their pilgrimage, wherein they were strangers. 5 And I have also heard **the groaning** of the children of Israel, whom the Egyptians keep in bondage; and I have remembered My Covenant. 6 Wherefore say unto the children of Israel, I Am the LORD, and I will bring you out from under the burdens of the Egyptians, and I will rid you out of their bondage, and I will redeem you with a stretched out arm, and with Great Judgments: 7 And I will take you to Me for a people, and I will be to you a God: and ye shall know that I Am the LORD your God, which bringeth you out from under the burdens of the Egyptians. 8 And I will bring you in unto the land, concerning the which I did swear to give it to Abraham, to Isaac, and to Jacob; and I will give it you for an heritage: I Am the LORD. 9 And Moses spake so unto the children of Israel: but **they hearkened not** unto Moses for anguish of spirit, and for cruel bondage."

The Israelites were a suffering people. They had "23 sighed by reason of the bondage, and they cried, and their cry came up unto God... 24 And God heard their groaning, and God remembered His Covenant with Abraham, with Isaac, and with Jacob" (Exodus 2:23-24). If the LORD had not intervened for them, He would not have been able to fulfill the Promise He had made to Abraham. "13 And He said unto Abram, Know of a surety that thy seed shall be a stranger in a land that is not theirs, and shall serve them; and they shall afflict them four hundred years; 14 and also that nation, whom they shall serve, will I judge: and afterward shall they come out with great substance... 18 In the same day the LORD made a Covenant with Abram, saying, Unto thy seed have I given this land, from the river of Egypt unto the great river, the river Euphrates: 19 the Kenites, and the Kenizzites, and the Kadmonites, 20 and the Hittites, and the Perizzites, and the Rephaims, 21 and the Amorites, and the Canaanites, and the Girgashites, and the Jebusites" (Genesis 15:13-14,18-21). And so, for Abraham, the LORD kept His Promise, and proceeded with His plan to free Israel, even though "they hearkened NOT unto Moses for anguish of spirit, and for cruel bondage."

- (Genesis 22:1-2,9-12,16-18) "1 And it came to pass after these things, that God did tempt {literally, test} Abraham, and said unto him, Abraham: and he said, Behold, here I am. 2 And He said, Take now thy son, thine only son Isaac, whom thou lovest, and get thee into the land of Moriah; and offer him there for a burnt offering upon one of the mountains which I will tell thee of... 9 And they came to the place which God had told him of; and Abraham built an altar there, and laid the wood in order, and bound Isaac his son, and laid him on the altar upon the wood. 10 And Abraham stretched forth his hand, and took the knife to slay his son. 11 And the Angel of the LORD called unto him out of heaven, and said, Abraham, Abraham: and he said, Here am I. 12 And He said, Lay not thine hand upon the lad, neither do thou any thing unto him: for now I know that thou fearest God, seeing thou hast not withheld thy son, thine only son from Me... 16 And said, By Myself have I sworn, saith the LORD, for because thou hast done this thing, and hast not withheld thy son, thine only son: 17 that in blessing I will bless thee, and in multiplying I will multiply thy seed as the stars of the heaven, and as the sand which is upon the sea shore; and thy seed shall possess the gate of his enemies; 18 and in thy seed shall ALL the nations of the Earth be blessed; **because thou hast obeyed My Voice.**"

"10 And the LORD spake unto Moses, saying, 11 Go in, speak unto Pharaoh king of Egypt, that he let the children of Israel go out of his land. 12 And Moses spake before the LORD, saying, Behold, the children of Israel have not hearkened unto me; how then shall Pharaoh hear me, who am of uncircumcised lips? 13 And the LORD spake unto Moses and unto Aaron, and gave them a charge unto the children of Israel, and unto Pharaoh king of Egypt, to bring the children of Israel out of the land of Egypt. 28 And it came to pass on the day when the LORD spake unto Moses in the land of Egypt, 29 that the LORD spake unto Moses, saying, I Am the LORD: speak thou unto Pharaoh king of Egypt all that I say unto thee."

The LORD's "charge" to us stands fast, whether it appears as if anyone will listen to us, or not. The LORD's Word is the only Absolute that needs to be considered. This is the position of FAITH. "And He said unto them, Where is your FAITH? And they being afraid wondered, saying one to another, What manner of Man is this! for He commandeth even the winds and water, and **they obey Him**" (Luke 8:25).

- (Jeremiah 7:22-23) "22 For I spake not unto your fathers, nor commanded them in the day that I brought them out of the land of Egypt, concerning burnt offerings or sacrifices: 23 but this thing commanded I them, saying, **Obey My Voice**, and I will be your God, and ye shall be My people: and walk ye in all the Ways that I have commanded you, that it may be well unto you."

Exodus / Chapter 7

And the LORD said unto Moses, See, I have made thee a god [or, as God] to Pharaoh: and Aaron thy

brother shall be thy prophet. 2 Thou shalt speak all that I command thee: and Aaron thy brother shall speak unto Pharaoh, that he send the children of Israel out of his land. 3 And **I will harden Pharaoh's heart, and multiply My Signs and My Wonders** in the land of Egypt. 4 But Pharaoh shall not hearken unto you, that I may lay My hand upon Egypt, and bring forth Mine armies, and My people the children of Israel, out of the land of Egypt by Great Judgments. 5 And the Egyptians shall know that I Am the LORD, when I stretch forth Mine hand upon Egypt, and bring out the children of Israel from among them. 6 And Moses and Aaron did as the LORD commanded them, so did they. 7 And Moses was fourscore years old, and Aaron fourscore and three years old, when they spake unto Pharaoh.

8 And the LORD spake unto Moses and unto Aaron, saying, 9 When Pharaoh shall speak unto you, saying, Show a miracle for you: then thou shalt say unto Aaron, Take thy rod, and cast it before Pharaoh, and it shall become a serpent.

10 And Moses and Aaron went in unto Pharaoh, and **they did so as the LORD had commanded:** and Aaron cast down his rod before Pharaoh, and before his servants, and it became a serpent. 11 Then Pharaoh also called the wise men and the sorcerers: now the magicians of Egypt, they also did in like manner with their enchantments. 12 For they cast down every man his rod, and they became serpents: but Aaron's rod swallowed up their rods. 13 And he hardened Pharaoh's heart, that he hearkened not unto them; as the LORD had said."

Satan is the "prince of the power of the air, the spirit that now worketh in the children of disobedience" (Ephesians 2:2), and as such, God has allowed Satan to have a limited amount of liberty in his arsenal. His abilities **imitate** the "Only Wise God" (1Timothy 1:17). Satan's imitation of God is NOT to glorify God-- but to usurp God altogether. "For thou [Satan] hast said in thine heart, I will ascend into Heaven, I will exalt my throne above the stars of God" (Isaiah 14:13).

- (2Thessalonians 2:4) "Who opposeth and exalteth himself above all that is called God, or that is worshipped; so that he as God sitteth in the Temple of God, showing himself that he is God."
- (Psalm 9:7) "But the LORD shall endure FOR EVER: He hath prepared His Throne for Judgment."

Pharaoh's sorcerers imitated God's Power, but possessed no Divine power in themselves. Their power was a counterfeit, for "the working of Satan with all power and signs and **lying** wonders" (2Thessalonians 2:9) could not defeat Moses. This is illustrated in the fact, that, "Aaron's rod swallowed up their rods." When that happened in front of Pharaoh's very own eyes, he was reminded of his finiteness, his limitations-- and it soured in his stomach and "hardened" his heart. This Divine Power of the Holy Spirit constantly limits Satan, and restrains his devouring egotistical desires from overstepping the purposes that God maintains. This has a tremendous hardening effect on the heart of Satan, making him-- of ALL creatures-- "most miserable" (1Corinthians 15:19).

"14 And the LORD said unto Moses, Pharaoh's heart is hardened, he refuseth to let the people go. 15 Get thee unto Pharaoh in the morning; lo, he goeth out unto the water; and thou shalt stand by the river's brink against he come; and the rod which was turned to a serpent shalt thou take in thine hand. 16 And thou shalt say unto him, The LORD God of the Hebrews hath sent me unto thee, saying, **Let My people go, that they may serve Me** in the wilderness: and, behold, hitherto thou wouldest not hear. 17 Thus saith the LORD, **In this thou shalt know that I Am the LORD:** behold, I will smite with the rod that is in Mine hand upon the waters which are in the river, and they shall be turned to blood. 18 And the fish that is in the river shall die, and the river shall stink; and the Egyptians shall loathe to drink of the water of the river. 19 And the LORD spake unto Moses, Say unto Aaron, Take thy rod, and stretch out thine hand upon the waters of Egypt, upon their streams, upon their rivers, and upon their ponds, and upon all their pools of water, that they may become blood; and that there may be blood throughout all the land of Egypt, both in vessels of wood, and in

vessels of stone."

In the Book of Revelation, one of the "two witnesses" (Revelation 11:3) (we think he shall be Moses, with Elijah being the other witness) shall again turn the waters to blood.

"Moses and Elijah are most probably the Two Witnesses indicated in this verse because of the similarity of their previous earthly ministries to the deeds of these Two Witnesses. Elijah 'shut heaven, that it rain[ed] not' (11:6), i.e., 'And Elijah the Tishbite, who was of the inhabitants of Gilead, said unto Ahab, As the LORD God of Israel liveth, before Whom I stand, there shall not be dew nor rain these years, but according to my word' (1Kings 17:1). Moses had 'power over [the] waters to turn them to blood' (11:6), i.e., '[Moses] turned their waters into blood, and slew their fish' (Psalm 105:29). Moses is remembered for the multitude of plagues that he called down upon Egypt, i.e., 'And the LORD said unto Moses, See, I have made thee a god to Pharaoh: and Aaron thy brother shall be thy prophet' (Exodus 7:1), while Elijah is remembered for calling down fire on the sacrifice on Mount Carmel. '37 Hear me, O LORD, hear me, that this people may know that Thou art the LORD God, and that Thou hast turned their heart back again. 38 Then the fire of the LORD fell, and consumed the burnt sacrifice, and the wood, and the stones, and the dust, and licked up the water that was in the trench' (1Kings 18:37-38)." -- from our "Commentary on the Book of Revelation" -- <http://WhatSaithTheScripture.com/The.Holy.Bible/index.html#Revelation> --, Chapter 11: The Two Witnesses and the Seventh Trumpet -- <http://WhatSaithTheScripture.com/The.Holy.Bible/Commentary.Revelations.11.html> --. [And for more background on Elijah, please read our "Elijah and the Prophets of Baal" -- <http://WhatSaithTheScripture.com/Stories/Stories.of.Faith/Elijah.Prophets.of.Baal.html> --.]

"20 And Moses and Aaron did so, as the LORD commanded; and he lifted up the rod, and smote the waters that were in the river, in the sight of Pharaoh, and in the sight of his servants; and all the waters that were in the river were turned to blood. 21 And the fish that was in the river died; and the river stank, and the Egyptians could not drink of the water of the river; and there was blood throughout all the land of Egypt. 22 And **the magicians of Egypt did so with their enchantments: and Pharaoh's heart was hardened**, neither did he hearken unto them; as the LORD had said. 23 And Pharaoh turned and went into his house, neither did he set his heart to this also. 24 And all the Egyptians digged round about the river for water to drink; for they could not drink of the water of the river. 25 And seven days were fulfilled, after that the LORD had smitten the river."

Notice the magicians could NOT lift the curse of God. They could only mock God's Almighty in imitation, using Satan's Divinely-limited power.

Exodus / Chapter 8

And the LORD spake unto Moses, Go unto Pharaoh, and say unto him, Thus saith the LORD, **Let My people go, that they may serve Me**. 2 And if thou refuse to let them go, behold, I will smite all thy borders with frogs: 3 and the river shall bring forth frogs abundantly, which shall go up and come into thine house, and into thy bedchamber, and upon thy bed, and into the house of thy servants, and upon thy people, and into thine ovens, and into thy kneadingtroughs: 4 and the frogs shall come up both on thee, and upon thy people, and upon all thy servants.

5 And the LORD spake unto Moses, Say unto Aaron, Stretch forth thine hand with thy rod over the streams, over the rivers, and over the ponds, and cause frogs to come up upon the land of Egypt. 6 And Aaron stretched out his hand over the waters of Egypt; and the frogs came up, and covered the land of Egypt. 7 And the magicians did so with their enchantments, and brought up frogs upon the land of Egypt. 8 Then Pharaoh called for Moses and Aaron, and said, **Entreat the LORD, that He may take away the frogs from me, and from my people**; and I will let the people go, that they may do sacrifice unto the LORD."

Again, notice that the LORD allowed Pharaoh's magicians to add to the frogs, but not to take the frogs away. This God devised for the purpose of hardening Pharaoh. For the LORD "hath made the Earth by His Power, He hath established the world by His Wisdom, and hath stretched out the heaven by His Understanding" (Jeremiah 51:15).

"9 And Moses said unto Pharaoh, Glory over me: **WHEN shall I entreat for thee**, and for thy servants, and for thy people, to destroy the frogs from thee and thy houses, that they may remain in the river only? 10 And he said, To morrow. And he said, **Be it according to thy word: that thou mayest know that there is NONE LIKE unto the LORD our God.** 11 And the frogs shall depart from thee, and from thy houses, and from thy servants, and from thy people; they shall remain in the river only."

Moses was a man of FAITH. God had worked it in him just for this service to which he was now called. "And the LORD said unto him [Moses], Who hath made man's mouth? or who maketh the dumb, or deaf, or the seeing, or the blind? have not I the LORD?" (Exodus 4:11). To proclaim something to be in fact, that is not yet seen with eyes, takes FAITH. "And [Jesus] turned Him unto His disciples, and said privately, Blessed are the eyes which see the things that ye see" (Luke 10:23).

- (Acts 26:18) "To open their eyes, and to turn them from darkness to Light, and from the power of Satan unto God, that they may receive forgiveness of sins, and inheritance among them which are sanctified by FAITH that is in Me."

For the Law of the Kingdom has ordained, that it is "according to your FAITH be it unto you" (Matthew 9:29).

"And Jesus said unto the centurion, Go thy way; and as thou hast believed, so be it done unto thee. And his servant was healed in the selfsame hour" (Matthew 8:13). This passage of Scripture brings before us one of the principal laws of the kingdom of heaven. In order to understand God's ways with His people, and our relations with the Lord, it is needful to understand this law thoroughly and not to deviate from it. Not only does God give or withhold His gifts according to the faith or unbelief of each, but they are granted in greater or lesser measure, only in proportion to the faith which receives them. God respects the right to decide which He has conferred on man. Therefore He can only bless us in the measure in which each yields himself up to His divine working, and opens all his heart to Him. Faith in God is nothing else than the full opening of the heart to receive everything from God; therefore man can only receive divine grace according to his faith; and this applies as much to divine healing as to any other grace of God." --from "Divine Healing" -- <http://WhatSaithTheScripture.com/Voice/Murray.Divine.Healing.html> -- by Andrew Murray.

For Moses to attribute the doing of it by Someone Whose face "no man can approach unto; Whom no man hath seen, nor can see: to Whom be honour and Power everlasting" (1Timothy 6:16), but Who is seen ONLY with the heart, this is "FAITH IN GOD" (Mark 11:22).

Note: No earthbound man has seen the face of God the Father. Not even Moses. And yet...

So, when Moses insisted that Pharaoh choose the time "when" (Exodus 8:9) the frogs would leave, he was allowing Pharaoh this honour for one reason only. "Be it according to thy word: **that thou mayest know that there is NONE LIKE unto the LORD our God.** And the frogs shall depart from thee" (10-11). This honour was actually a challenge. "Pharaoh, you pick the day. I'll ask the LORD God. And then you'll see for yourself, 'that there is NONE LIKE unto the LORD our God.' For the LORD will do what you can't do. And to show you that it's NO MERE COINCIDENCE, the LORD will let you choose when."

"12 And Moses and Aaron went out from Pharaoh: and Moses cried unto the LORD because of the frogs

which He had brought against Pharaoh. 13 And **the LORD did according to the word of Moses**; and the frogs died out of the houses, out of the villages, and out of the fields. 14 And they gathered them together upon heaps: and the land stank. 15 But when Pharaoh saw that there was respite, he hardened his heart, and hearkened not unto them; as the LORD had said."

Events happened just "as the LORD had said." That's why Pharaoh "hardened his heart"-- he coveted the Power that God possessed. Pharaoh was "of [his] father the Devil, and the lusts of [his] father" (John 8:44) he did. The Devil covets all that God Is, and so, also, did the Devil's child, Pharaoh. Instead of "glorifying and praising God for all the things that they had **heard** and **seen**, as it **was told unto them**" (Luke 2:20), the wicked father and son "coveted after [God]... and pierced themselves through with many sorrows" (1Timothy 6:10).

"16 And the LORD said unto Moses, Say unto Aaron, Stretch out thy rod, and smite the dust of the land, that it may become lice throughout all the land of Egypt. 17 And they did so; for Aaron stretched out his hand with his rod, and smote the dust of the Earth, and it became lice in man, and in beast; **all the dust of the land became lice** throughout all the land of Egypt. 18 And the magicians did so with their enchantments to bring forth lice, but **they could not**: so there were lice upon man, and upon beast. 19 Then the magicians said unto Pharaoh, **This is the finger of God: and Pharaoh's heart was hardened**, and he hearkened not unto them; **as the LORD had said.**"

SIDE NOTE: Discontent Hardens a Heart. "Set Me as a seal upon thine heart, as a seal upon thine arm: for love is strong as death; jealousy is cruel as the grave: the coals thereof are coals of fire, which hath a most vehement flame" (Song of Solomon 8:6). With violence, the wicked refuse to be content. "34 For jealousy is the rage of a man: therefore he will NOT spare in the day of vengeance. 35 He will NOT regard any ransom; neither will he rest content, though thou givest many gifts" (Proverbs 6:34-35). Covetousness and pride were two of the offending sins that cast down Satan from his glorious position. "15 Thou wast perfect in thy ways from the day that thou wast created, **till iniquity was found in thee**... 17 Thine heart was lifted up because of thy beauty, thou hast corrupted thy wisdom by reason of thy brightness: I will cast thee to the ground, I will lay thee before kings, that they may behold thee" (Ezekiel 28:15,17). When the LORD's Judgment fell, it was swift. "I beheld Satan as lightning fall from Heaven" (Luke 10:18). "How art thou fallen from Heaven, O Lucifer, son of the morning! how art thou **cut down** to the ground, which didst weaken the nations!" (Isaiah 14:12). He and his following "angels which kept not their First Estate, but left their own habitation, [Almighty God] hath reserved in **everlasting** chains under darkness unto the Judgment of the Great Day" (Jude 1:6). "Wrath is cruel, and anger is outrageous; but who is able to stand before envy?" (Proverbs 27:4).

- (Revelation 20:1-3,10) "1 And I saw an angel come down from Heaven, having The Key of the Bottomless Pit and a great chain in his hand. 2 And he laid hold on the dragon, that old serpent, which is the Devil, and Satan, and bound him a thousand years. 3 And cast him into the Bottomless Pit, and shut him up, and set a seal upon him, that he should deceive the nations no more, till the thousand years should be fulfilled: and after that he must be loosed a little season... 10 And the Devil that deceived them was cast into the Lake Of Fire And Brimstone, where the beast and the false prophet are, and shall be tormented day and night **for ever and ever.**"

Even so, "if God spared not the angels that sinned, but cast them down to Hell, and delivered them into chains of darkness, to be reserved unto Judgment" (2Peter 2:4), then neither will He spare mere mortals that persist in sinning. "And then will I profess unto them, I never knew you: depart from Me, ye that **work** iniquity" (Matthew 7:23). For God does truly have a time when Judgment falls. "And Mine eye shall not spare thee, neither will I have pity: but I will recompense **thy ways** upon thee, and thine abominations shall be in the midst of thee: and ye shall know that I am the **LORD**" (Ezekiel 7:4).

- (Deuteronomy 29:20, 30:14-18) "The LORD will not spare him, but then the anger of the LORD and His jealousy shall smoke against that man, and all the curses that are written in this Book shall lie upon him, and the LORD shall **blot out** his name from under Heaven... 30:14 But the Word is very nigh unto thee, in thy mouth, and in thy heart, that thou mayest **do it**. 15 See, I have set before thee this day Life and Good, and death and evil; 16 in that **I command thee this day to love the LORD thy God**, to **walk** in His Ways, and to **keep** His Commandments and His Statutes and His Judgments, that thou mayest live and multiply: and the LORD thy God shall bless thee in the Land whither thou goest

to possess it. 17 But if thine heart turn away, so that thou wilt NOT hear, but shalt be drawn away, and worship other gods, and serve them; 18 I denounce unto you this day, that ye shall surely perish."

And the Time of Judgment is near at hand! "For then shall be Great Tribulation --

<http://WhatSaithTheScripture.com/WStS.Timeline.html> --, such as **was not since The Beginning of the world to this time, no, nor ever shall be**" (Matthew 24:21).

"20 And the LORD said unto Moses, Rise up early in the morning, and stand before Pharaoh; lo, he cometh forth to the water; and say unto him, Thus saith the LORD, **Let My people go, that they may serve Me**. 21 Else, if thou wilt not let My people go, behold, I will send swarms of flies upon thee, and upon thy servants, and upon thy people, and into thy houses: and the houses of the Egyptians shall be full of swarms of flies, and also the ground whereon they are. 22 And I will sever in that day the land of Goshen, in which My people dwell, that NO swarms of flies shall be there; **to the end thou mayest know that I Am the LORD** in the midst of the Earth. 23 And I will put a division between **My** people and **thy** people: to morrow shall this Sign be."

The LORD Creator of Heaven and Hell "put a division between" His people and the Devil's, "a great gulf fixed: so that they [in Hell] which would pass from hence [in Hell] to you [in Heaven] cannot; neither can they [in Heaven] pass to us [in Hell], that would come from thence [in Heaven]" (Luke 16:26). Heaven is a Holy Place, "and there shall in NO wise enter into it ANY thing that defileth, neither whatsoever worketh abomination, or maketh a lie: but [only] they which are written in the Lamb's Book of Life" (Revelation 21:27). God demonstrated to Pharaoh this Truth repeatedly, "that ye may know how that **the LORD doth put a difference** between the Egyptians and Israel" (Exodus 11:7). The LORD sets The Standard, and even Himself, of course, lives by It. "That be far from Thee to do after this manner, to slay the righteous with the wicked: and **that the righteous should be as the wicked, that be FAR from Thee**: Shall not the Judge of all the Earth do **right**?" (Genesis 18:25). And, since "the disciple is NOT above his Master, nor the servant above his LORD" (Matthew 10:24), the Master requires His people to also LIVE BY The Standard.

- (Ezekiel 44:23) "Teach My people the **difference** between the Holy and profane, and cause them to **discern** between the unclean and the Clean."
- (Leviticus 10:10-11) "10 "Put **difference** between holy and unholy, and between unclean and clean; 11 and that ye may **teach** the children of Israel all the Statutes which the LORD hath spoken unto them by the hand of Moses."
- (Malachi 3:18) "Then shall ye return, and **discern** between the righteous and the wicked, between him that serveth God and him that serveth Him not."
- (Amos 5:15) "Hate the evil, and love the good, and **establish Judgment** in the gate."

"24 And **the LORD did so**; and there came a grievous swarm of flies into the house of Pharaoh, and into his servants' houses, and into all the land of Egypt: the land was corrupted by reason of the swarm of flies. 25 And Pharaoh called for Moses and for Aaron, and said, Go ye, sacrifice to your God in the land.

26 And Moses said, It is not meet so to do; for we shall sacrifice the abomination of the Egyptians to the LORD our God: lo, shall we sacrifice the abomination of the Egyptians before their eyes, and will they not stone us? 27 We will go three days' journey into the wilderness, and sacrifice to the LORD our God, as **He shall command** us.

28 And Pharaoh said, I will let you go, that ye may sacrifice to the LORD your God in the wilderness; only ye shall not go very far away: entreat for me.

29 And Moses said, Behold, I go out from thee, and I will entreat the LORD that the swarms of flies may depart from Pharaoh, from his servants, and from his people, to morrow: but **let not Pharaoh deal deceitfully any more** in not letting the people go to sacrifice to the LORD."

Moses already knew what Pharaoh would do, because the LORD Omniscient told him that Pharaoh's heart would be "hardened." But Moses wanted to let Pharaoh know that he understood completely, Pharaoh's methods, and that he therefore warned him, "Let not Pharaoh deal deceitfully any more." When the LORD's people obey God in discerning the wicked, then they are prepared for battle, "lest Satan should get an advantage of us: for we are not ignorant of his devices" (2Corinthians 2:11).

"30 And Moses went out from Pharaoh, and entreated the LORD. 31 And the LORD did according to the word of Moses; and He removed the swarms of flies from Pharaoh, from his servants, and from his people; **there remained not one.** 32 And **Pharaoh hardened his heart at this time also**, neither would he let the people go."

People who will not listen-- even with repeated opportunities-- are people who will never listen, and who therefore conclude their trial on Earth with an everlasting imprisonment in Hell, "whose damnation is just" (Romans 3:8). The only *Scriptural* way to PROVE that you ARE one who listens, is by present obedience. "And hereby we do know that we know Him, **if we keep His Commandments**" (1John 2:3). [Please read "That Ye May Know That Ye Have Eternal Life, Or, The Biblical Doctrine of the Assurance of Salvation, Or, Only Those Who Abide in Christ May Know That They Have Eternal Life -- <http://WhatSaithTheScripture.com/Fellowship/That.Ye.May.Know.That.Ye.html> --", for more on this topic.]

Exodus / Chapter 9

Then the LORD said unto Moses, Go in unto Pharaoh, and tell him, Thus saith the LORD God of the Hebrews, **Let My people go, that they may serve Me.** 2 For if thou refuse to let them go, and wilt hold them still, 3 Behold, the hand of the LORD is upon thy cattle which is in the field, upon the horses, upon the asses, upon the camels, upon the oxen, and upon the sheep: there shall be a very grievous murrain (a highly infectious disease of cattle, e.g., anthrax)."

Each Judgment that the LORD sent against Egypt increased in severity. The Tribulation Judgments shall progress in intensity, also. (Read "Commentary on the Book of Revelation" -- <http://WhatSaithTheScripture.com/The.Holy.Bible/index.html#Revelation> --.)

"4 And the LORD shall **sever** between the cattle of Israel and the cattle of Egypt: and there shall **nothing** die of all that is the children's of Israel. 5 And the LORD appointed **a set time**, saying, To morrow the LORD shall do this thing in the land. 6 And the LORD did that thing on the morrow, and all the cattle of Egypt died: but of the cattle of the children of Israel died **not one.**"

This production was staged by the LORD. The decisions are His alone. He decides what lives and what dies. He decides to whom it will happen and to whom it will not. He decides the timing and He alone carries it out. "The LORD is known **by the Judgment** which **He executeth**: the wicked is snared in the work of his own hands" (Psalm 9:16).

"7 And Pharaoh sent, and, behold, there was **not one** of the cattle of the Israelites dead. And **the heart of Pharaoh was hardened**, and he did NOT let the people go.

8 And the LORD said unto Moses and unto Aaron, Take to you handfuls of ashes of the furnace, and let Moses sprinkle it toward the heaven in the sight of Pharaoh. 9 And it shall become small dust in all the land of Egypt, and shall be a boil breaking forth with blains upon man, and upon beast, throughout all the land of

Egypt. 10 And they took ashes of the furnace, and stood before Pharaoh; and Moses sprinkled it up toward heaven; and it became a boil breaking forth with blains upon man, and upon beast. 11 And **the magicians could not stand before Moses because of the boils**; for the boil was **upon** the magicians, and upon all the Egyptians. 12 And the LORD hardened the heart of Pharaoh, and he hearkened not unto them; as the LORD had spoken unto Moses.

13 And the LORD said unto Moses, Rise up early in the morning, and stand before Pharaoh, and say unto him, Thus saith the LORD God of the Hebrews, **Let My people go, that they may serve Me**. 14 For I will at this time send all My plagues upon thine heart, and upon thy servants, and upon thy people; **that thou mayest know that there is none like Me in all the Earth**. 15 For now I will stretch out My hand, that I may smite thee and thy people with pestilence; and thou shalt be cut off from the Earth. 16 **And in very deed for this cause have I raised thee up, for to show in thee My Power; and that My Name may be declared throughout all the Earth.**"

If the LORD cannot receive praise from a heart that loves Him, then He will use the hateful heart for His Own Purpose. "Surely the wrath of man shall praise Thee: the remainder of wrath shalt Thou restrain" (Psalm 76:10). In Pharaoh's case, God **used** Pharaoh's wrath as a target for the demonstration of His Divine Power, establishing His Mighty Name as a Witness "throughout all the Earth." This is the reason that God even allowed Pharaoh the chance to be born-- "for this cause" and "for this same purpose"-- that God's "Power" and "Name" be "declared throughout all the Earth" (Exodus 9:16; Romans 9:17).

- (Romans 9:13-23) "13 As it is written, Jacob have I loved, but Esau have I hated. 14 What shall we say then? Is there unrighteousness with God? God forbid. 15 For He saith to Moses, I will have mercy on whom I will have mercy, and I will have compassion on whom I will have compassion. 16 So then it is not of him that willeth, nor of him that runneth, but of God that showeth mercy. 17 For the Scripture saith unto Pharaoh, **Even for this same purpose have I raised thee up, that I might show My Power in thee, and that My Name might be declared throughout all the Earth**. 18 Therefore hath He mercy on whom He will have mercy, and whom He will He hardeneth. 19 Thou wilt say then unto Me, Why doth He yet find fault? For who hath resisted His Will? 20 Nay but, O man, who art thou that repliest against God? Shall the thing formed say to Him that formed it, Why hast Thou made me thus? 21 Hath not the Potter Power over the clay, of the same lump to make one vessel unto honour, and another unto dishonour? 22 **WHAT IF GOD, WILLING TO SHOW HIS WRATH, AND TO MAKE HIS POWER KNOWN, ENDURED WITH MUCH LONGSUFFERING THE VESSELS OF WRATH FITTED TO DESTRUCTION**: 23 and that He might make known the riches of His glory on the vessels of mercy, which He had afore prepared unto glory."

Side Note Question: Why doesn't God just force our wills to do whatever He wants?

"But do any of you object and say, why does not God make us willing? Is it not because he has reprobated us, that he does not change our hearts and make us willing? No, sinner, it is not because he has reprobated you; but because you are so obstinate that he cannot, wisely, and in consistency with the public good, take such measures as will convert you. Here you are waiting for God to make you willing to go to heaven, and all the while you are diligently using the means to get to hell; yes, exerting yourself with greater diligence to get to hell, than it would cost to insure your salvation, if applied with equal zeal in the service of your God. You tempt God, and then turn round and ask him why he does not make you willing? Now, sinner, let me ask you, do you think you are a reprobate? If so, what do you think the reason is that has led the infinitely benevolent God to reprobate you? There must be some reason; what do you suppose it is? Did you ever seriously ask yourself, what is the reason that a wise and infinitely benevolent God has never made me willing to accept salvation? It must be for one of the following reasons: either--

(1.) He is a malevolent being, and wills your damnation for its own sake; or--

(2.) He cannot make you willing if he would; or--

(3.) You behave in such a manner in the circumstances in which you are, that, to his infinitely benevolent mind it appears unwise to take such a course as would bring you to repentance. Such a change in the administration of his government as would make you willing, would not, upon the whole, be wise.

Now, which of these do you think it is? You will not probably take the ground that he is malevolent, and desires your damnation because he delights in misery; nor will you, I suppose, take the ground that he could not convert you if he would, that is, if he thought it wise to do so.

The other, then, must be the reason, to wit: that your heart, and conduct, and stubbornness, are so abominable in his sight, that, every thing considered, he sees that to use such further means with you as to secure your conversion, would, on the whole, do more hurt than good to his kingdom. I have not time at present to agitate the question whether you, as a moral agent, could not resist any possible amount of moral influence that could be brought to bear upon you, consistently with your moral freedom.

Do you ask how I know that the reason why God does not make you willing is, that he sees that it would be unwise in him to do so? I answer, that it is an irresistible inference, from these two facts, that he is infinitely benevolent, and that he does not actually make you willing. I do not believe that God would neglect anything that he saw to be wise and benevolent, in the great matter of man's salvation. Who can believe that he could give his only-begotten and well-beloved Son to die for sinners, and then neglect any wise and benevolent means for their salvation? No, sinner, if you are a reprobate, it is because God foresaw that you would do just as you are doing; that you would be so wicked as to defeat all the efforts that he could wisely, make for your salvation. What a variety of means he has used with you. At one time he has thrown you into the furnace of affliction; and when this has not softened you, he has turned round and loaded you with favours. He has sent you his word, he has striven by his Spirit, he has allured you by the cross; he has tried to melt you by the groanings of Calvary; and tried to drive you back from the way to death, by rolling in your ears the thunders of damnation. At one time clouds and darkness have been round about you; the heavens have thundered over your head; divine vengeance has hung out, all around your horizon, the portentous clouds of coming wrath. At another time mercy has smiled upon you from above like the noon-day sun, breaking through an ocean of storms. He urges every motive; he lays heaven, earth and hell, under perpetual contributions for considerations to move your stony heart. But you deafen your ears, and close your eyes, and harden your heart, and say, 'Cause the holy one of Israel to cease from before us.' And what is the inference from all this? How must all this end? 'Reprobate silver shall men call them, because the Lord has rejected them.'" --from "Lectures on Systematic Theology" --

<http://WhatSaithTheScripture.com/Voice/Systematic.Theology.html> --, Lecture 75 "Reprobation" --

[http://WhatSaithTheScripture.com/Voice/Systematic.Theology.9.html#LECTURE 75](http://WhatSaithTheScripture.com/Voice/Systematic.Theology.9.html#LECTURE%2075) --, by C. G. Finney --

<http://WhatSaithTheScripture.com/Fellowship/Charles.G.Finney.html> --.

The bold aggression of Pharaoh towards God-- his barefaced gall in opposing the Might and Power of the Great Jehovah, by REFUSING GOD, in letting the Israelites go, equals insanity! God commanded, "Let My people go, that they may serve Me." The audacity of Pharaoh!

"17 As yet **exaltest thou** thyself against **MY** people, that thou wilt **NOT let them go?**"

And yet, even in the face of such impudence, God has, and will have, His Way with the wicked. "For it is written, As I live, saith the LORD, EVERY knee shall bow to Me, and EVERY tongue shall confess to God... That at the Name of Jesus EVERY knee should bow, of things in Heaven, and things in Earth, and things under the Earth; and that EVERY tongue should confess that Jesus Christ is LORD, **to the glory of God the Father**" (Romans 14:11; Philadelphia 2:10-11).

"18 Behold, to morrow about this time **I will cause it to rain a very grievous hail, such as hath not been** in Egypt since the foundation thereof even until now. 19 Send therefore now, and gather thy cattle, and all that thou hast in the field; for upon every man and beast which shall be found in the field, and shall not be brought home, the hail shall come down upon them, and they shall die. 20 He that **feared the Word of the**

LORD among the servants of Pharaoh made his servants and his cattle flee into the houses: 21 And he that **regarded NOT the Word of the LORD** left his servants and his cattle in the field."

The lesson is simply put: "This do, and LIVE; for I fear God" (Genesis 42:18). If you obey God's Word, you'll live with Him forever. "Furthermore we have had fathers of our flesh which corrected us, and we gave them reverence: shall we not much rather be in **subjection** unto the Father of spirits, **and live**?" (Hebrews 12:9).

"22 And the LORD said unto Moses, Stretch forth thine hand toward heaven, that there may be hail in all the land of Egypt, upon man, and upon beast, and upon every herb of the field, throughout the land of Egypt.

23 And Moses stretched forth his rod toward heaven: and the LORD sent thunder and hail, and the fire ran along upon the ground; and the LORD rained hail upon the land of Egypt. 24 So there was hail, and fire mingled with the hail, very grievous, such as **there was none like it** in all the land of Egypt since it became a nation. 25 And the hail smote throughout all the land of Egypt all that was in the field, both man and beast; and the hail smote every herb of the field, and brake every tree of the field. 26 **Only in the land of Goshen, where the children of Israel were, was there no hail.**

27 And Pharaoh sent, and called for Moses and Aaron, and said unto them, **I have sinned this time: the LORD is righteous, and I and my people are wicked.** 28 Entreat the LORD (for it is enough) that there be no more mighty thunderings and hail; and I will let you go, and ye shall stay no longer.

29 And Moses said unto him, As soon as I am gone out of the city, I will spread abroad my hands unto the LORD; and the thunder shall cease, neither shall there be any more hail; **that thou mayest know how that the Earth is the LORD's.** 30 But as for thee and thy servants, **I know that ye will NOT yet fear the LORD God.**

31 And the flax and the barley was smitten: for the barley was in the ear, and the flax was balled. 32 But the wheat and the rie were not smitten: for they were not grown up.

33 And Moses went out of the city from Pharaoh, and spread abroad his hands unto the LORD: and the thunders and hail ceased, and the rain was not poured upon the Earth. 34 And when Pharaoh saw that the rain and the hail and the thunders **were ceased**, he sinned **yet more**, and hardened his heart, he and his servants. 35 And the heart of Pharaoh was hardened, neither would he let the children of Israel go; as the LORD had spoken by Moses."

Exodus / Chapter 10

And the LORD said unto Moses, Go in unto Pharaoh: for I have hardened his heart, and the heart of his servants, **that I might show these My Signs** before him: 2 **and that thou mayest tell in the ears of thy son, and of thy son's son, what things I have wrought in Egypt, and My Signs** which I have done among them; **that ye may know how that I Am the LORD.**"

God used Pharaoh's stubbornness for His Own Purpose. God hardened even more a heart that was destined never to repent, thereby giving God many occasions in which to use His Miraculous Signs. He purposed to testify to His chosen people, both presently and forever after, that they would "know therefore that the LORD thy God, He is God, the Faithful God, which keepeth Covenant and Mercy with them that **love** Him and **keep** His Commandments to a thousand generations" (Deuteronomy 7:9). Was this not a Divinely-Wise use of a wicked king's eternally-obstinate heart? "For the wisdom of this world is foolishness with God. For it is written, He taketh the wise in their own craftiness" (1Corinthians 3:19).

- (Jude 1:25) "To the Only Wise God our Saviour, be Glory and Majesty, Dominion and Power, both now

and for ever. Amen."

"3 And Moses and Aaron came in unto Pharaoh, and said unto him, Thus saith the LORD God of the Hebrews, How long wilt thou refuse to humble thyself before Me? **Let My people go, that they may serve Me.** 4 Else, if thou refuse to let My people go, behold, to morrow will I bring the locusts into thy coast: 5 and they shall cover the face of the Earth, that one cannot be able to see the Earth: and they shall eat the residue of that which is escaped, which remaineth unto you from the hail, and shall eat every tree which groweth for you out of the field: 6 and they shall fill thy houses, and the houses of all thy servants, and the houses of all the Egyptians; which neither thy fathers, nor thy fathers' fathers have seen, since the day that they were upon the Earth unto this day. And he turned himself, and went out from Pharaoh."

God's ultimate goal for Israel is, "Let My people go, **that they may serve Me.**" Six times He repeats this goal. And now, the LORD brings in the locust to destroy ALL "the residue of that which is escaped, which remaineth unto you from the hail". One Judgment finishes what the previous Judgment restrained. Each Judgment has a work to do, progressive in intensity as well as in scope, until all of God's Purposes are fulfilled in His people. And, so will He do again in the Judgments of the Tribulation, "which shall come upon all the world, to try them that dwell upon the Earth" (Revelation 3:10). [Please see our article, "For the Elect's Sake" -- <http://WhatSaithTheScripture.com/Timeline/For.the.Elects.Sake.html> --, to read about "the LORD God's merciful **cutting short of the Tribulation Week**" for the sake of those people who will be His.]

"7 And Pharaoh's servants said unto him, How long shall this man be a snare unto us? let the men go, that they may serve the LORD their God: knowest thou not yet that Egypt is destroyed?

8 And Moses and Aaron were brought again unto Pharaoh: and he said unto them, Go, serve the LORD your God: but **who** are they that shall go?

9 And Moses said, We will go with our young and with our old, with our sons and with our daughters, with our flocks and with our herds will we go; for we must hold a feast unto the LORD.

10 And he said unto them, Let the LORD be so with you, as I will let you go, and your little ones: look to it; for evil is before you. 11 **Not so:** go now **ye that are men**, and serve the LORD; for that ye did desire. And they were driven out from Pharaoh's presence."

Even Pharaoh's own people were amazed at the stubbornness of their leader! "Knowest thou not yet that Egypt is destroyed?" At their prodding, Pharaoh conceded, "Go, serve the LORD your God". Yet, no sooner were the words out of his mouth did he question with a "but **who** are they that shall go?" Moses told him that everyone would go-- "with our young and with our old"-- and not just all of the people, but also all of their cattle. Pharaoh said, "I will let you go, and your little ones". And again, no sooner were his words spoken than that he was taking them back! "**Not so:** go now **ye that are men**". Only the men could go. Pharaoh just wouldn't let God have dominion!

"12 And the LORD said unto Moses, *Stretch out thine hand over the land of Egypt for the locusts*, that they may come up upon the land of Egypt, and eat every herb of the land, even all that the hail hath left.

13 And Moses stretched forth his rod over the land of Egypt, and the LORD brought an east wind upon the land all that day, and all that night; and when it was morning, the east wind brought the locusts. 14 And the locusts went up over all the land of Egypt, and rested in all the coasts of Egypt: very grievous were they; **before them there were no such locusts as they, neither after them shall be such.** 15 For they covered the face of the whole Earth, so that the land was darkened; and they did eat every herb of the land, and all the fruit of the trees which the hail had left: and there remained not any green thing in the trees, or in the herbs of the field, through all the land of Egypt."

Locusts of another sort, demonic locusts, will cover the Earth during the Tribulation.

"The 5th Trumpet judgment is the plague of **demonic locusts** that the LORD releases upon wicked men for 5 months." (Read more about it: Tribulation Timeline (Part 3) --

<http://WhatSaithTheScripture.com/Timeline/Timelin.Trib.Timeline.Pt.3.html#5th35> --)

"16 Then Pharaoh called for Moses and Aaron in haste; and he said, I have sinned against the LORD your God, and against you. 17 Now therefore forgive, I pray thee, my sin only this once, and entreat the LORD your God, that he may take away from me this death only.

18 And he went out from Pharaoh, and entreated the LORD. 19 And the LORD turned a mighty strong west wind, which took away the locusts, and cast them into the Red Sea; there remained **not one** locust in all the coasts of Egypt. 20 But the LORD hardened Pharaoh's heart, so that he would not let the children of Israel go.

21 And the LORD said unto Moses, Stretch out thine hand toward heaven, that there may be darkness over the land of Egypt, even **darkness which may be felt**. 22 And Moses stretched forth his hand toward heaven; and there was a thick darkness in all the land of Egypt three days: 23 They saw not one another, neither rose any from his place for three days: **but all the children of Israel had light in their dwellings**.

24 And Pharaoh called unto Moses, and said, Go ye, serve the LORD; **only** let your flocks and your herds be stayed: let your little ones also go with you.

25 And Moses said, Thou **must** give us also sacrifices and burnt offerings, that we may sacrifice unto the LORD our God. 26 Our cattle also **shall go with us**; there shall not an hoof be left behind; for thereof must we take **to serve the LORD our God**; and we know not with what we must serve the LORD, until we come thither.

27 But the LORD hardened Pharaoh's heart, and he would not let them go. 28 And Pharaoh said unto him, Get thee from me, take heed to thyself, see my face no more; for in that day thou seest my face thou shalt die.

29 And Moses said, Thou hast spoken well, I will see thy face again **NO MORE**."

A miserable man is Pharaoh! The LORD God has taken Pharaoh's freewill choice to oppose "15 the Blessed and **Only** Potentate, the King of kings, and Lord of lords; 16 Who **Only** hath Immortality, dwelling in the Light which no man can approach unto; Whom no man hath seen, nor can see: to Whom be Honour and Power Everlasting. Amen" (1Timothy 6:15-16), and has used it to demonstrate His Almightyness to an eternal generation, of which we, in Christ, are partakers!

As Moses stands before Pharaoh this final time, the LORD directs His servant for the Masterstroke that will bring Him Ruling Recognition from all the people and the mental dethroning of Egypt's little god.

Exodus / Chapter 11

And the LORD said unto Moses, Yet will I bring **ONE PLAGUE MORE** upon Pharaoh, and upon Egypt; afterwards he **WILL** let you go hence: when he shall let you go, he shall surely thrust you out hence **ALTOGETHER**. 2 Speak now in the ears of the people, and let every man borrow of his neighbour, and every woman of her neighbour, jewels of silver, and jewels of gold. 3 And the LORD gave the people **favour** in the sight of the Egyptians. Moreover **the man Moses was very great in the land of Egypt, in**

the sight of Pharaoh's servants, and in the sight of the people."

This is the final confrontation, the "one more plague", that forces Pharaoh to do the one thing he has refused to do-- admit sovereignty to God.

"4 And Moses said, **THUS SAITH THE LORD**, About midnight will I go out into the midst of Egypt: 5 and ALL the firstborn in the land of Egypt *shall die*, from *the firstborn of Pharaoh that sitteth upon his throne*, even unto the firstborn of the maidservant that is behind the mill; and all the firstborn of beasts. 6 And there shall be a great cry throughout all the land of Egypt, such as there was none like it, nor shall be like it any more. 7 But against any of the children of Israel shall not a dog move his tongue, against man or beast: that ye may **know how that the LORD doth put a difference between the Egyptians and Israel**. 8 And all these thy servants shall come down unto me, and bow down themselves unto me, saying, Get thee out, and all the people that follow thee: and after that I will go out. And he [Moses] went out from Pharaoh **in a great anger**. 9 And the LORD said unto Moses, Pharaoh shall not hearken unto you; **that My Wonders may be multiplied** in the land of Egypt. 10 And Moses and Aaron did all these Wonders before Pharaoh: and the LORD hardened Pharaoh's heart, so that he would not let the children of Israel go out of his land."

Anger, directed by God, is a *good* thing.

Exodus / Chapter 12

And the LORD spake unto Moses and Aaron in the land of Egypt, saying, 2 This month shall be unto you the beginning of months: it shall be the first month of the year to you. 3 Speak ye unto all the congregation of Israel, saying, In the tenth day of this month they shall take to them every man a lamb, according to the house of their fathers, a lamb for an house: 4 and if the household be too little for the lamb, let him and his neighbour next unto his house take it according to the number of the souls; every man according to his eating shall make your count for the lamb. 5 Your lamb shall be **without blemish**, a male of the first year: ye shall take it out from the sheep, or from the goats: 6 and ye shall keep it up until the fourteenth day of the same month: and the whole assembly of the congregation of Israel shall kill it in the evening. 7 And they shall take of the blood, and strike it on the two side posts and on the upper door post of the houses, wherein they shall eat it. 11 ...it is the LORD'S Passover. 12 For **I WILL PASS THROUGH THE LAND OF EGYPT THIS NIGHT, AND WILL SMITE ALL THE FIRSTBORN IN THE LAND OF EGYPT, BOTH MAN AND BEAST; AND AGAINST ALL THE GODS OF EGYPT I WILL EXECUTE JUDGMENT: I AM THE LORD**. 13 And **THE BLOOD SHALL BE TO YOU FOR A TOKEN** upon the houses where ye are: and **WHEN I SEE THE BLOOD, I WILL PASS OVER YOU, AND THE PLAGUE SHALL NOT BE UPON YOU TO DESTROY YOU**, when I smite the land of Egypt."

Jesus Christ is the Sacrificial Passover Lamb, the Fulfillment of the above stated "Law having a shadow of Good Things to come, and not the very image of the Things" (Hebrews 10:1).

"The days preceding the crucifixion of the LORD Jesus match the pattern of the feast of the Passover. A lamb was selected on the 10th of Abib for the Passover sacrifice. 'In the tenth day of this month they shall take to them every man a lamb' (Exodus 12:3). Jesus presented Himself as the Passover lamb on the very day that the Jews were picking out lambs for their Passover. That day was the 10th of Nisan (Abib), which we now call the Triumphal Entry of Christ. 'Rejoice greatly, O daughter of Zion; shout, O daughter of Jerusalem: behold, thy King cometh unto thee: He is just, and having salvation; lowly, and riding upon an ass, and upon a colt the foal of an ass' (Zechariah 9:9)... On that very day, Jesus wept and said, 'If thou hadst known, even thou, at least in this thy day, the things which belong unto thy peace! but now they are hid from thine eyes' (Luke 19:42).

Our LORD Jesus celebrated the Passover with His disciples on Wednesday, the 14th of Nisan, after sundown according to the pattern in Genesis, as observed by the conservative Pharisees of Jesus' day. That night after the Passover meal (now remembered by Christians as the Last Supper), Jesus was taken and interrogated. On Thursday morning-- still the 14th of Nisan-- Jesus was crucified at 9AM ('the third hour', Mark 15:25). He died at 3PM ('the ninth hour', Matthew 27:46, 50)-- still the 14th of Nisan. Remember, the Pharisees' day began in the evening at sundown (6PM) and continued 24 hours until it ended the next evening (6PM), according to the Genesis pattern, i.e. 'And God called the light Day, and the darkness He called Night. And the evening and the morning were the first day' (Genesis 1:5).

Because the Sanhedrin was controlled by the Sadducees, i.e. Caiaphas was the high priest (Matthew 26:57), the Passover was celebrated by the Sadducees in accord to the Greek reckoning of time. This was that a day began and ended at midnight-- like our present day-- instead of at sundown. This enabled Jesus to eat the Passover like the Pharisees on Wednesday evening and still die at the exact time the Sadducees were to kill their Passover lamb on Thursday at 3PM-- Exodus 12:6, literally, 'between the evening'. The Sadducees would eat their Passover meal on Thursday evening of the day Jesus was crucified. They considered that evening as part of the Passover, since their day did not end until midnight.

The New Testament fulfillment of Passover is the death of the LORD Jesus Christ on the cross of Calvary. He provided Himself as the sacrificial Passover lamb on the 14th day of the first month (Nisan). 'The next day John seeth Jesus coming unto him, and saith, Behold the Lamb of God, which taketh away the sin of the world' (John 1:29). Also, 'Christ our Passover is sacrificed for us' (1Corinthians 5:7)." --from our article, "The Appointed Times" --

<http://WhatSaithTheScripture.com/Timeline/The.Appointed.Times.html> -- .

"22 And ye shall take a bunch of hyssop, and dip it in the blood that is in the basin, and strike the lintel and the two side posts with the blood that is in the basin; and none of you shall go out at the door of his house until the morning. 23 For the LORD will pass through to smite the Egyptians; and when He seeth the blood upon the lintel, and on the two side posts, the LORD will pass over the door, and will not suffer the destroyer to come in unto your houses to smite you. 24 **And ye shall observe this thing for an ordinance to thee and to thy sons for ever.** 25 And it shall come to pass, when ye be come to the land which the LORD will give you, according as He hath promised, that ye shall keep this service. 26 And it shall come to pass, when your children shall say unto you, What mean ye by this service? 27 That ye shall say, It is the sacrifice of the LORD'S Passover, **Who passed over the houses of the children of Israel in Egypt, when He smote the Egyptians, and delivered our houses.** And the people bowed the head *and worshipped*. 28 And the children of Israel went away, and did as the LORD had commanded Moses and Aaron, so did they.

29 And it came to pass, that at midnight **the LORD smote all the firstborn in the land of Egypt, from the firstborn of Pharaoh that sat on his throne unto the firstborn of the captive that was in the dungeon; and all the firstborn of cattle.** 30 And Pharaoh rose up in the night, he, and all his servants, and all the Egyptians; and there was a great cry in Egypt; for **there was not a house where there was not one dead.**

31 And he called for Moses and Aaron **by night**, and said, RISE UP, AND GET YOU FORTH FROM AMONG MY PEOPLE, both ye and the children of Israel; and GO, SERVE THE LORD, **as ye have said.** 32 Also TAKE your flocks and your herds, **as ye have said**, and BE GONE; and bless me also."

Defeated, humiliated, and robbed of his son, Pharaoh's resistance has been replaced by grief and frustration. "But after thy hardness and impenitent heart treasurest up unto thyself wrath against the day of wrath and revelation of the Righteous Judgment of God; Who will render to every man according to his deeds" (Romans

2:5-6).

- (Proverbs 15:13) "By sorrow of the heart the spirit is broken."
- (Proverbs 17:22) "But a broken spirit drieth the bones."
- (Proverbs 18:14) "A wounded spirit who can bear?"

"33 And the Egyptians were urgent upon the people, that they might send them out of the land **in haste**; for they said, We be ALL dead men.

34 And the people took their dough before it was leavened, their kneadingtroughs being bound up in their clothes upon their shoulders. 35 And the children of Israel did according to the word of Moses; and they borrowed of the Egyptians jewels of silver, and jewels of gold, and raiment: 36 and the LORD gave the people favour in the sight of the Egyptians, so that they lent unto them such things as they required. And they spoiled the Egyptians.

37 And the children of Israel journeyed from Rameses to Succoth, about six hundred thousand on foot that were men, beside children. 38 And a mixed multitude went up also with them; and flocks, and herds, even very much cattle. 39 And they baked unleavened cakes of the dough which they brought forth out of Egypt, for it was not leavened; because they were thrust out of Egypt, and could not tarry, neither had they prepared for themselves any victual."

40 Now the sojourning of the children of Israel, who dwelt in Egypt, was four hundred and thirty years. 41 And it came to pass at the end of the four hundred and thirty years, even **the selfsame day it came to pass**, that ALL the hosts of the LORD went out from the land of Egypt. 42 **It is a night to be much observed unto the LORD for bringing them out from the land of Egypt**: this is that night of the LORD to be observed of all the children of Israel in their generations... 51 And it came to pass the selfsame day, that the LORD did bring the children of Israel out of the land of Egypt by their armies."

"God assayed to go and take Him a nation from the midst of another nation, by temptations, by Signs, and by Wonders, and by war, and by a Mighty Hand, and by a Stretched Out Arm, and by great terrors, according to all that the LORD your God did for you in Egypt before your eyes...

because the LORD loved you, and because He would keep the Oath which He had sworn unto your fathers, hath the LORD brought you out with a Mighty Hand, and redeemed you out of the house of bondmen, from the hand of Pharaoh king of Egypt.

The LORD brought us forth out of Egypt with a Mighty Hand, and with an Outstretched Arm, and with great terribleness, and with Signs, and with Wonders"

(Deuteronomy 4:34; 7:8; 26:8).

Exodus / Chapter 13

And it came to pass, when Pharaoh had let the people go, that God led them NOT through the way of the land of the Philistines, although that was near; for God said, Lest peradventure the people repent when they see war, and they return to Egypt: 18 but **God led the people about**, through the way of the wilderness of the Red Sea: and the children of Israel went up **harnessed** out of the land of Egypt.

19 And Moses took the bones of Joseph with him: for he had straitly sworn the children of Israel, saying, God will surely visit you; and ye shall carry up my bones away hence with you.

20 And they took their journey from Succoth, and encamped in Etham, in the edge of the wilderness. 21 And the LORD went before them by day in a pillar of a cloud, **to lead them the way**; and by night in a pillar of fire, **to give them light**; to go by day and night: 22 He took not away the pillar of the cloud by day, nor the pillar of fire by night, from before the people."

As long as we keep in the Straight Path of God's Will it is the LORD's **responsibility** to make His Way clear to us.

- (Isaiah 42:16) "And I WILL bring the blind by a Way that they knew not; I WILL lead them in Paths that they have not known: I WILL make darkness light before them, and crooked things straight. These things WILL I do unto them, and not forsake them."
- (Genesis 24:27) "I being in the Way, the LORD led me."
- (Psalm 5:8) "Lead me, O LORD, in Thy Righteousness because of mine enemies; make Thy Way straight before my face."
- (Jeremiah 31:9) "They shall come with weeping, and with supplications WILL I lead them: I WILL cause them to walk by the rivers of waters in a Straight Way, wherein they shall not stumble: for I am a Father to Israel."

Exodus / Chapter 14

And the LORD spake unto Moses, saying, 2 Speak unto the children of Israel, that they turn and encamp before Pihahiroth, between Migdol and the sea, over against Baalzephon: before it shall ye **encamp by the sea**. 3 For Pharaoh will say of the children of Israel, They are entangled in the land, the wilderness hath **shut them in**. 4 And I will harden Pharaoh's heart, that **he shall follow after them**; and **I will be honoured upon Pharaoh, and upon all his host; that the Egyptians may know that I Am the LORD**. And they did so.

5 And it was told the king of Egypt that the people fled: and the heart of Pharaoh and of his servants was turned against the people, and they said, **Why have we done this**, that we have let Israel go from serving us? 6 And he made ready his chariot, and took his people with him: 7 and he took six hundred chosen chariots, and **ALL THE CHARIOTS OF EGYPT**, and captains over every one of them. 8 And the LORD hardened the heart of Pharaoh king of Egypt, and he pursued after the children of Israel: and the children of Israel went out with an High Hand. 9 But the Egyptians pursued after them, **ALL THE HORSES AND CHARIOTS OF PHARAOH**, and his horsemen, and his army, and overtook them encamping by the sea, beside Pihahiroth, before Baalzephon."

After "there was a great cry in Egypt; for **there was not a house where there was not one dead**" (Exodus 12:30), Egypt-- including its king-- couldn't wait another moment to rid themselves completely of these Israelites. Pharaoh "called for Moses and Aaron **by night**, and said, **RISE UP, AND GET YOU FORTH FROM AMONG MY PEOPLE**" (12:31). "And the Egyptians were **urgent** upon the people, that they might **send them out of the land in haste**; for they said, We be **ALL dead men**" (12:33). In order to be quickly shed of them, Egypt even gave Israel whatever was asked of them, including "jewels of silver, and jewels of gold, and raiment... so that they lent unto them such things as they required. And they spoiled the Egyptians" (12:35-36). Israel was told, "**BE GONE**" (12:32)-- and yet, right after leaving, the captors forgot **ALL** of God's Judgments-- even their dead firstborn! Hatred compelled them to insanely ask, "**Why have we done this**, that we have let Israel go from serving us?" (14:5). The tears they had shed were selfishly poured forth because of their own pain and loss-- not for Godly sorrow for their sins. "For Godly sorrow

worketh repentance to Salvation NOT to be repented of: but **the sorrow of the world worketh death**" (2Corinthians 7:10).

- (Ezekiel 18:27,30) "27 When the wicked man turneth **away from** his wickedness that he hath committed, and **doeth that which is lawful and right**, he shall save his soul alive. 30 Repent, and turn yourselves from all your transgressions; so iniquity shall not be your ruin."
- (Matthew 27:3-5) "3 Then Judas, which had betrayed Him [the LORD Jesus], when he saw that He was condemned, repented himself [was afraid of his impending Punishment], and brought again the thirty pieces of silver to the chief priests and elders, 4 saying, I have sinned in that I have betrayed the Innocent Blood. And they said, What is that to us? see thou to that. 5 And he cast down the pieces of silver in the temple, and departed, and went **and hanged himself**." [Note: Christians will not see Judas Iscariot in Heaven. Please read, "What the Bible Says About Suicide" -- <http://WhatSaithTheScripture.com/Fellowship/What.Bible.Says.Suicide.html> --, to find out why.]

"10 And when Pharaoh drew nigh, the children of Israel lifted up their eyes, and, behold, the Egyptians marched after them; and they were **sore afraid**: and the children of Israel **cried** out unto the LORD. 11 And they said unto Moses, **Because there were no graves in Egypt, hast thou taken us away to die in the wilderness? wherefore hast thou dealt thus with us**, to carry us forth out of Egypt? 12 Is not this the word that we did tell thee in Egypt, saying, Let us alone, that we may serve the Egyptians? For it had been **better** for us to serve the Egyptians, than that we should **die** in the wilderness."

"Wherefore hast thou **dealt** with us?", as if Moses had done them a great evil! In the face of all those Signs and Wonders wrought by the Hand of God recently witnessed by these people, the Israelites proved, by their lack of FAITH in a Most Merciful God, why they had spent all their lives in bondage. Before much time had passed at all, they had *already forgotten* the LORD Who had brought them "forth out of Egypt with a Mighty Hand, and with an Outstretched Arm, and with great terribleness, and with Signs, and with Wonders" (Deuteronomy 4:34; 7:8; 26:8).

"Unbelief is folly. It charges God foolishly. Man's are the weakness and failure, but never God's. My faith may be lacking but not His power. Memory and meditation, when rightly directed, correct unbelief. God has shown Himself great. He has always done wonders. He led even an unbelieving and murmuring people out of Egypt and for forty years through the wilderness, and His miracles of power and love were marvellous." -- from "George Mueller of Bristol" -- by A. T. Pierson -- <http://WhatSaithTheScripture.com/Fellowship/A.T.Pierson.html> --, chapter 21: "The Church Life and Growth."

"13 And Moses said unto the people, **Fear ye not, stand still, and see the Salvation of the LORD**, which He will show to you to day: for the Egyptians whom ye have seen to day, **ye shall see them again no more for ever**. 14 **The LORD shall fight for you**, and ye shall hold your peace."

There are times when we are to "cry aloud, spare not" (Isaiah 58:1), and then there are other times when we are to "stand still" and watch God in the fight. Both take faith. Both are at His leading. Both demonstrate confidence in the LORD -- <http://WhatSaithTheScripture.com/Promises/Promises.Confidence.LORD.html> -- and in His ability to "keep that which [we] have committed unto Him against that day" (2Timothy 1:12).

"15 And the LORD said unto Moses, Wherefore criest thou unto Me? speak unto the children of Israel, that they go forward: 16 But lift thou up thy rod, and stretch out thine hand over the sea, and divide it: and the children of Israel shall go on dry ground through the midst of the sea. 17 And I, behold, I will harden the hearts of the Egyptians, and they shall follow them: and **I will get Me honour** upon Pharaoh, and upon all his host, upon his chariots, and upon his horsemen. 18 And the Egyptians shall know that I Am the LORD,

when I have gotten me honour upon Pharaoh, upon his chariots, and upon his horsemen.

19 And the angel of God, which went before the camp of Israel, removed and went behind them; and the pillar of the cloud went from before their face, and stood behind them: 20 And it came between the camp of the Egyptians and the camp of Israel; and it was a cloud and darkness to them, but it gave light by night to these: so that the one came not near the other **all the night.**"

- (Psalm 34:7) "The angel of the LORD encampeth round about them that fear Him, and delivereth them."
- {Psalm 91:11) "For He shall give His angels charge over thee, to keep thee in all thy ways."
- {Daniel 6:22) "My God hath sent His angel, and hath shut the lions' mouths, that they have not hurt me."
- (Hebrews 1:14) "Are they not all ministering spirits, sent forth to minister for them who shall be heirs of Salvation?"

"21 And Moses stretched out his hand over the sea; and the LORD caused the sea to go back by a strong east wind **all that night**, and made the sea dry land, and the waters were divided. 22 And the children of Israel went into the midst of the sea upon the dry ground: and the waters were a wall unto them on their right hand, and on their left.

23 And the Egyptians pursued, and went in after them to the midst of the sea, even ALL Pharaoh's horses, his chariots, and his horsemen. 24 And it came to pass, that in the morning watch the LORD looked unto the host of the Egyptians through the pillar of fire and of the cloud, and troubled the host of the Egyptians, 25 and **took off their chariot wheels**, that they drave them heavily: so that the Egyptians said, Let us flee from the face of Israel; **for the LORD fighteth for them** against the Egyptians."

26 And the LORD said unto Moses, Stretch out thine hand over the sea, **that the waters may come again upon the Egyptians**, upon their chariots, and upon their horsemen. 27 And Moses stretched forth his hand over the sea, and the sea returned to his strength when the morning appeared; and the Egyptians fled against it; and the LORD overthrew the Egyptians in the midst of the sea. 28 And the waters returned, and covered the chariots, and the horsemen, and ALL THE HOST OF PHARAOH that came into the sea after them; **there remained not so much as one of them.**"

- (Proverbs 16:4) "The LORD hath made all things for Himself: yea, even the wicked for the day of evil."

"29 But the children of Israel walked **upon dry land in the midst of the sea**; and the waters were a WALL unto them on their right hand, and on their left. 30 Thus **the LORD saved Israel that day out of the hand of the Egyptians**; and Israel saw the Egyptians dead upon the sea shore. 31 And Israel saw that GREAT WORK which the LORD did upon the Egyptians: and the people feared the LORD, and **believed the LORD, and His servant Moses.**"

Exodus / Chapter 15

The Song

Then **sang Moses** and the children of Israel **this Song unto the LORD**, and spake, saying, **I will sing unto the LORD, for He hath triumphed gloriously**: the horse and his rider hath He thrown into the sea. 2 The LORD is my Strength and Song, and He is become my Salvation: He is my God, and I will prepare Him an habitation; my father's God, and I will exalt Him. 3 **The LORD is a Man of War**: the LORD is His Name. 4 **Pharaoh's chariots and his host hath He cast into the sea**: his chosen captains also are drowned in the Red Sea. 5 The depths have covered them: they sank into the bottom as a stone. 6 Thy Right Hand, O

LORD, is become glorious in power: Thy Right Hand, O LORD, hath dashed in pieces the enemy. 7 And in the greatness of Thine excellency Thou hast overthrown them that rose up against Thee: Thou sentest forth Thy wrath, which consumed them as stubble.

8 And with the blast of Thy nostrils the waters were gathered together, **the floods stood upright as an heap**, and **the depths were congealed in the heart of the sea**. 9 The enemy said, I will pursue, I will overtake, I will divide the spoil; my lust shall be satisfied upon them; I will draw my sword, my hand shall destroy them."

Truly, "the LORD saved Israel that day out of the hand of the Egyptians." That Great Day, recorded by Divine Inspiration from the hand of the very servant who held his rod over the waters and saw them stand "upright as an heap", recorded for the Divine purpose that men would forever be encouraged by the "GREAT WORK which the LORD did" for His people.

Dr. James A. Wylie -- <http://WhatSaithTheScripture.com/Fellowship/James.A.Wylie.html> -- (1808-1890) remembered this Bible Record when recounting a victorious moment in history, attributing the triumph to "the Great Judge [that] had descended upon the scene":

"The tragedy of the Armada was a great sermon preached to the Popish and Protestant nations. The text of that sermon was that England had been saved by a Divine Hand. All acknowledged the skill and daring of the English admirals, and the patriotism and bravery of the English sailors and soldiers, but all at the same time confessed that these alone could not have saved the throne of Elizabeth. The Almighty Arm had been stretched out, and a work so stupendous had been wrought, as to be worthy of a place by the side of the wonders of old time.

There were a consecutiveness and a progression in the acts, a unity in the drama, and a sublimity in the terrible but righteous catastrophe in which it issued, that told the least reflective that the Armada's overthrow was not fortuitous, but the result of arrangement and plan. Even the Spaniards themselves confessed that the Divine Hand was upon them; that One looked forth at times from the storm cloud that pursued them, and troubled them. Christendom at large was solemnized: the ordinary course of events had been interrupted; the heavens had been bowed, and the Great Judge had descended upon the scene. While dismay reigned within the Popish kingdoms, the Protestant States joined in a chorus of thanksgiving. In England by the command of her Majesty, and in the United Provinces by order of the States-General, a day of festival was appointed, whereon all were commanded to repair to church, and 'render thanks unto God.' 'The aforesaid solemnity,' says the Dutch historian, 'was observed on the 29th of November, which day was wholly spent in fasting, prayer, and giving of thanks.' On that day Queen Elizabeth, royally attired, and followed by the estates and dignitaries of the realm, visited London, and rode through the streets of the City to the Cathedral of St. Paul's, in a triumphal chariot drawn by four white horses. The houses were hung with blue cloth; the citizens in their holiday dress lined the streets, ranged in companies, and displaying the ensigns and symbols of their various guilds and crafts. Eleven banners and flags which had been taken from the Spaniards hung displayed in front of St. Paul's. The queen with her clergy and nobles, having offered public thanks in the church, thereafter retired to Paul's Cross, where a sermon was preached from the same stone pulpit from which Ridley's and Latimer's voices had often been heard; and after the sermon the queen rose and addressed her assembled subjects, exhorting them to unite with her in extolling that merciful Power which had scattered her foes, and shielded from overthrow her throne and realm.

But the deliverance was a common one to the Protestant kingdoms. All shared in it with England, and each in turn took up this song of triumph. Zealand, in perpetual memory of the

event, caused new coin of silver and brass to be struck, stamped on the one side with the arms of Zealand, and the words, 'Glory to God alone,' and on the other with a representation of certain great ships, and the words, 'The Spanish Fleet.' In the circumference round the ships was the motto, 'It came, went, and was. Anno 1588.' Holland, too, struck a commemorative medal of the Armada's destruction; and Theodore Beza, at Geneva, celebrated the event in Latin verse.

It seemed as if the days of Miriam, with their judgments and songs of triumph, had returned, and that the Hebrew prophetess had lent her timbrel to England, that she might sing upon it the destruction of a mightier host than that of Egypt, and the overthrow of a greater tyrant than he who lay drowned in the Red Sea. England began the song, as was meet, for around her isle had the Armada been led, a spectacle of doom; but soon, from beyond the German Ocean, from the foot of the Alps, from the shores of Scotland, other voices were heard swelling the anthem, and saying, 'Sing ye to the Lord, for he hath triumphed gloriously: the horse and his rider hath he thrown into the sea. The enemy said, I will pursue, I will overtake, I will divide the spoil; my lust shall be satisfied upon them; I will draw my sword, my hand shall destroy them. **Thou didst blow with thy wind, the sea covered them: they sank as lead in the mighty waters.**'" [Bold emphasis by WStS] --from "The History of Protestantism" --

<http://WhatSaithTheScripture.com/Voice/History.Protestant.v1.b1.html> -- by J. A. Wylie, Vol.3, Book 23 --

http://WhatSaithTheScripture.com/Voice/History.Protestant.v3.b23.html#CHAPTER_19 --.

"10 Thou didst blow with Thy wind, the sea covered them: they sank as lead in the mighty waters. 11 Who is like unto Thee, O LORD, among the gods? who is like Thee, glorious in Holiness, fearful in Praises, doing Wonders?

12 Thou stretchedst out Thy Right Hand, the Earth swallowed them. 13 Thou in Thy mercy hast led forth the people which Thou hast Redeemed: Thou hast guided them in Thy strength unto Thy holy habitation.

14 The people shall hear, and be afraid: sorrow shall take hold on the inhabitants of Palestina. 15 Then the dukes of Edom shall be amazed; the mighty men of Moab, trembling shall take hold upon them; all the inhabitants of Canaan shall melt away. 16 Fear and dread shall fall upon them; by the greatness of Thine Arm they shall be as still as a stone;

**till Thy people pass over, O LORD,
till the people pass over, which Thou hast purchased.**

17 Thou shalt bring them in, and plant them in the mountain of Thine inheritance, in the place, O LORD, which Thou hast made for Thee to dwell in, in the Sanctuary, O LORD, which Thy hands have established.
18 The LORD shall reign for ever and ever."

Psalm 105

"23 Israel also came into Egypt; and Jacob sojourned in the land of Ham... 37 He brought them forth also with silver and gold: and **there was not one feeble person among their tribes.** 38 Egypt was glad when they departed: for the fear of them fell upon them. 39 He spread a Cloud for a covering; and Fire to give light in the night... 43 And He brought forth His people with **joy**, and His chosen with **gladness**: 44 And gave them the lands of the heathen: and they inherited the labour of the people; 45 **that they might observe His Statutes, and keep His Laws. Praise ye the LORD.**"

End of "Moses, The Servant of God.. Part One"

Moses, The Servant of God

Part Two

Portions from the Pentateuch,
the King James Version by The Holy Spirit through Moses
with notes by Katie Stewart

"And they sing the Song of Moses the servant of God,
and the Song of the Lamb, saying,
Great and marvellous are Thy works, LORD God Almighty;
Just and True are Thy ways, Thou King of Saints"
(Revelation 15:3).

by Katie Stewart
6-11-2001

PART TWO

Exodus / Chapter 19 Preparation to Meet with the LORD

In the third month, when the children of Israel were gone forth out of the land of Egypt, the same day came they into the wilderness of Sinai. 2 For they were departed from Rephidim, and were come to the desert of Sinai, and had pitched in the wilderness; and there Israel camped before the mount.

3 And Moses went up unto God, and the LORD called unto him out of the mountain, saying, Thus shalt thou say to the house of Jacob, and tell the children of Israel; 4 Ye have seen what I did unto the Egyptians, and how I bare you on eagles' wings, and brought you unto Myself. 5 Now therefore, **IF ye will obey My Voice indeed, and keep My Covenant, THEN ye shall be a peculiar treasure unto Me** above all people: for all the Earth is Mine: 6 and ye shall be unto Me a Kingdom of priests, and an **HOLY** nation. These are the Words which thou shalt speak unto the children of Israel.

7 And Moses came and called for the elders of the people, and laid before their faces all these Words which the LORD commanded him. 8 And all the people answered together, and said, All that the LORD hath spoken we will do. And Moses returned the words of the people unto the LORD.

9 And the LORD said unto Moses, Lo, I come unto thee in a thick cloud, **that the people may hear when I speak with thee, and believe thee for ever**. And Moses told the words of the people unto the LORD.

10 And the LORD said unto Moses, Go unto the people, and sanctify them to day and to morrow, and let them wash their clothes, 11 and be ready against the third day: for the third day the LORD will come down in the sight of all the people upon Mount Sinai. 12 And thou shalt set bounds unto the people round about, saying, Take heed to yourselves, that ye go not up into the mount, or touch the border of it: whosoever

toucheth the mount shall be surely put to death: 13 there shall not an hand touch it, but he shall surely be stoned, or shot through; whether it be beast or man, it shall not live: when the trumpet soundeth long, they shall come up to the mount."

In Exodus 32:9, the Record of these people stands forever formed in the opinion of God Himself. "The LORD said unto Moses, I have seen this people, and, behold, it is a **stiffnecked people**." These people were much worse than just being "forgetful hearer[s]" (James 1:25), they were "forgetful seers." Having seen with their **own** eyes their **own** deliverance **firsthand**, and **knowing** Whose Hand had miraculously worked for them, to then SO SOON have bewailed their freedom by condemning Moses for their desert trials-- God righteously judged them as "stiffnecked".

- "11 And they said unto Moses... hast thou taken us away to **die in the wilderness**? wherefore hast thou dealt thus with us, to carry us forth out of Egypt? 12 Is not this the word that we did tell thee in Egypt, saying, Let us alone, that we may serve the Egyptians? For it had been **better** for us to serve the Egyptians, than that we should **die in the wilderness**" (Exodus 14:11-12). "And the people spake against God, and against Moses, Wherefore have ye brought us up out of Egypt to **die in the wilderness**? for there is no bread, neither is there any water; and our soul loatheth this light bread" (Numbers 21:5).

"Die in the wilderness!" "Die in the wilderness!" "Die in the wilderness!" God knew these men would forever complain, and He knew that only two adult men (and possibly their wives, although not mentioned) would enter the Promised Land, along with the "then" children (who would do their growing during the time that they "wandered in the wilderness" [Joshua 14:10] for forty years). God gave them "according to [their] faith" (Matthew 9:29), "for the LORD had said of them, **They shall surely die in the wilderness**. And there was not left a man of them, save Caleb the son of Jephunneh, and Joshua the son of Nun" (Numbers 26:65).

It was to these people that the LORD GOD tried to impress with severity the importance of His Holy Self. He wanted them to take Him seriously-- to FEAR Him! "Wherefore now let the fear of the LORD be upon you; take heed and do it: for there is NO iniquity with the LORD our God" (2Chronicles 19:7). Hence, the warning: "Take heed to yourselves, that ye go not up into the mount, or touch the border of it: whosoever toucheth the mount shall be surely put to DEATH: there shall not an hand touch it, but he shall surely be stoned, or shot through; whether it be beast or man, it SHALL NOT LIVE."

Fear Has Its Place

by C. H. Spurgeon

"Happy is the man that feareth alway" (Proverbs 28:14).

"The fear of the LORD is the beginning and the foundation of all true religion. Without a solemn awe and reverence of God there is no foothold for the more brilliant virtues. He whose soul does not worship will never live in holiness.

He is happy who feels a jealous fear of doing wrong. Holy fear looks not only before it leaps, but even before it moves. It is afraid of error, afraid of neglecting duty, afraid of committing sin. It fears ill company, loose talk, and questionable policy. This does not make a man wretched, but it brings him happiness. The watchful sentinel is happier than the soldier who sleeps at his post. He who foreseeeth evil and escapes it is happier than he who walks carelessly on and is destroyed.

Fear of God is a quiet grace which leads a man along a choice road, of which it is written, 'No lion shall be there, neither shall any ravenous beast go up thereon.' Fear of the very appearance of evil is a purifying principle, which enables a man, through the power of the Holy Spirit, to

keep his garments unspotted from the world. Solomon had tried both worldliness and holy fear: in the one he found vanity, in the other happiness. Let us not repeat his trial but abide by his verdict." --from "Faith's Checkbook" --

<http://WhatSaithTheScripture.com/Fellowship/Spurgeon/Faith.Checkbook/Faiths.Checkbook.Preface.html> --- by C. H. Spurgeon --
<http://WhatSaithTheScripture.com/Fellowship/Charles.Haddon.Spurgeon.html> ---

"14 And Moses went down from the mount unto the people, and sanctified the people; and they washed their clothes. 15 And he said unto the people, Be ready against the third day: come not at your wives."

The people were to ready themselves to be presented before the LORD.

- They were to be clean, inside and out. "Sanctify yourselves therefore, and be ye holy: for I Am the LORD your God" (Leviticus 20:7).
- They were expected to give the LORD GOD His due. "Give unto the LORD the glory due unto His Name" (1Chronicles 16:29).
- He deserved respect and honour. "I am the LORD... I have gotten Me honour upon Pharaoh, upon His chariots, and upon His horsemen" (Exodus 14:18).
- He deserved their praise. "I will lift up mine eyes unto the hills, from whence cometh my help... Our soul is escaped as a bird out of the snare of the fowlers: the snare is broken, and we are escaped" (Psalm 121:1; 124:7).
- He deserved their complete attention. "Know thou the God of thy father, and serve Him with a perfect heart and with a willing mind: for the LORD searcheth all hearts, and understandeth all the imaginations of the thoughts: if thou seek Him, He will be found of thee; but if thou forsake Him, He will cast thee off for ever" (1Chronicles 28:9).
- He deserved their worship. "Worship the LORD in the beauty of holiness" (Psalm 29:2).

"16 And it came to pass on the third day in the morning, that there were thunders and lightnings, and a thick cloud upon the mount, and the voice of the trumpet exceeding loud; so that all the people that was in the camp trembled. 17 And Moses brought forth the people out of the camp to meet with God; and they stood at the nether part of the mount. 18 And Mount Sinai was altogether on a smoke, because the LORD descended upon it in fire: and the smoke thereof ascended as the smoke of a furnace, and the whole mount quaked greatly. 19 And when the voice of the trumpet sounded long, and waxed louder and louder, Moses spake, and **God answered him by a Voice.**"

- (Matthew 4:4) "But he answered and said, It is written, Man shall not live by bread alone, but by **every Word** that proceedeth out of the mouth of God."

"20 And the LORD came down upon Mount Sinai, on the top of the mount: and the LORD called Moses up to the top of the mount; and Moses went up. 21 And the LORD said unto Moses, Go down, charge the people, lest they break through unto the LORD to gaze, and many of them perish... 24 And the LORD said unto him, Away, get thee down, and thou shalt come up, thou, and Aaron with thee: but let not the priests and the people break through to come up unto the LORD, lest He break forth upon them. 25 So Moses went down unto the people, and spake unto them."

Exodus / Chapter 20

The Giving of the Ten Commandments

And God spake all these words, saying, **2 I Am the LORD thy God, which have brought thee out of the land of Egypt, out of the house of bondage.**

3 Thou shalt have no other gods before Me.

4 Thou shalt not make unto thee any graven image, or any likeness of any thing that is in heaven above, or that is in the Earth beneath, or that is in the water under the Earth: 5 Thou shalt not bow down thyself to them, nor serve them: for I the LORD thy God am a Jealous God, visiting the iniquity of the fathers upon the children unto the third and fourth generation of them that **hate Me**; 6 and showing mercy unto thousands of them that **love Me**, and keep My Commandments.

7 Thou shalt not take the Name of the LORD thy God in vain; for the LORD will not hold him guiltless that taketh His Name in vain.

8 Remember the Sabbath Day, to keep it holy. 9 Six days shalt thou labour, and do all thy work: 10 but the seventh day is the Sabbath of the LORD thy God: in it thou shalt not do any work, thou, nor thy son, nor thy daughter, thy manservant, nor thy maidservant, nor thy cattle, nor thy stranger that is within thy gates: 11 for in six days the LORD made heaven and Earth, the sea, and all that in them is, and rested the seventh day: wherefore the LORD blessed the Sabbath Day, and hallowed it.

12 Honour thy father and thy mother: that thy days may be long upon the land which the LORD thy God giveth thee.

13 Thou shalt not kill.

14 Thou shalt not commit adultery.

15 Thou shalt not steal.

16 Thou shalt not bear false witness against thy neighbour.

17 Thou shalt not covet thy neighbour's house, thou shalt not covet thy neighbour's wife, nor his manservant, nor his maidservant, nor his ox, nor his ass, nor any thing that is thy neighbour's."

What the LORD is simply saying to Israel, and to anyone who follows after Him, "I Am the LORD thy God, which have brought thee out of the land of Egypt, out of the house of bondage." Love ME. Live for ME. Obey ME. "Love the LORD thy God with ALL thy heart, and with ALL thy soul, and with ALL thy mind" (Matthew 22:37). [Please read D. L. Moody's most excellent examination of "The Ten Commandments" -- <http://WhatSaithTheScripture.com/Voice/Moody.Ten.Commandments.html> --.]

"18 And all the people saw the thunderings, and the lightnings, and the noise of the trumpet, and the mountain smoking: and when the people saw it, they removed, and stood afar off. 19 And they said unto Moses, Speak thou with us, and we will hear: but let NOT God speak with us, lest we DIE. 20 And Moses said unto the people, Fear not: for God is come to PROVE you, and **that His fear may be before your faces, that ye sin not**. 21 And the people stood afar off, and Moses drew near unto the thick darkness where God was. 22 And the LORD said unto Moses, Thus thou shalt say unto the children of Israel, **Ye have seen that I have talked with you from heaven**. 23 Ye shall not make with me gods of silver, neither shall ye make unto you gods of gold. 24 An altar of Earth thou shalt make unto Me, and shalt sacrifice thereon thy burnt offerings, and thy peace offerings, thy sheep, and thine oxen: in all places where I record My Name I will come unto thee, and I will bless thee."

God's purpose in visually showing Himself to these obstinate people, by means of "the thunderings, and the lightnings, and the noise of the trumpet, and the mountain smoking", and then "the thick darkness where God was", He performed that they might believe. "Ye have seen that I have talked with you from heaven." Why? "That His fear may be before your faces, that ye sin not." What does a reverential trust in God accomplish? No sinning!

- (Proverbs 16:6) "By the fear of the LORD men **depart** from evil."
- (Proverbs 8:13) "The fear of the LORD is to **hate** evil."
- (Proverbs 3:7) "Fear the LORD, and **depart** from evil."
- (Proverbs 14:16) "A wise man feareth, and **departeth** from evil."
- (Job 1:1) "There was a man in the land of Uz, whose name was Job; and that man was perfect and upright, and one that feared God, and **eschewed** [shunned] evil." [Please read "Must We Then Sin?" -- <http://WhatSaithTheScripture.com/Fellowship/Must.We.Then.Sin.html> --.]

Exodus / Chapter 24

And the LORD said unto Moses, Come up to Me into the mount, and be there: and I will give thee tables of stone, and a Law, and Commandments which I have written; that thou mayest teach them.

13 And Moses rose up, and his minister Joshua: and Moses went up into the mount of God. 14 And he said unto the elders, Tarry ye here for us, until we come again unto you: and, behold, Aaron and Hur are with you: if any man have any matters to do, let him come unto them. 15 And Moses went up into the mount, and a Cloud covered the mount.

16 And the Glory of the LORD abode upon Mount Sinai, and the Cloud covered it six days: and the seventh day He called unto Moses out of the midst of the Cloud. 17 **And the sight of the Glory of the LORD was like DEVOURING FIRE on the top of the mount in the eyes of the children of Israel.** 18 And Moses went **into** the midst of the Cloud, and gat him up into the mount: and Moses was in the mount **forty days and forty nights.**"

The LORD wanted to give the Children of Israel a test, a test which would prove openly what lay at the core of their hearts. Moses has gone away from the camp. It appears-- by sight-- that he is not coming back. What will they do?

Exodus / Chapter 25

Preparation to Build the Tabernacle of the LORD

And the LORD spake unto Moses, saying, 2 Speak unto the children of Israel, that they bring Me an offering: of every man that giveth it **willingly with his heart** ye shall take My offering. 3 And this is the offering which ye shall take of them; gold, and silver, and brass, 4 and blue, and purple, and scarlet, and fine linen, and goats' hair, 5 and rams' skins dyed red, and badgers' skins, and shittim wood, 6 oil for the light, spices for anointing oil, and for sweet incense, 7 onyx stones, and stones to be set in the ephod, and in the breastplate.

8 And let them make Me a sanctuary; that I may dwell among them. 9 According to all that I show thee, after the pattern of the Tabernacle, and the pattern of all the instruments thereof, even so shall ye make it.

10 And they shall make an Ark of shittim wood: two cubits and a half shall be the length thereof, and a cubit and a half the breadth thereof, and a cubit and a half the height thereof. 11 And thou shalt overlay it with pure gold, within and without shalt thou overlay it, and shalt make upon it a crown of gold round about. 12 And thou shalt cast four rings of gold for it, and put them in the four corners thereof; and two rings shall be in the one side of it, and two rings in the other side of it. 13 And thou shalt make staves of shittim wood, and overlay them with gold.

14 And thou shalt put the staves into the rings by the sides of the Ark, that the Ark may be borne with them. 15 The staves shall be in the rings of the Ark: they shall not be taken from it. 16 And thou shalt put into the Ark the Testimony which I shall give thee.

17 And thou shalt make a Mercy Seat of pure gold: two cubits and a half shall be the length thereof, and a cubit and a half the breadth thereof. 18 And thou shalt make two cherubims of gold, of beaten work shalt thou make them, in the two ends of the Mercy Seat. 19 And make one cherub on the one end, and the other cherub on the other end: even of the Mercy Seat shall ye make the cherubims on the two ends thereof. 20 And the cherubims shall stretch forth their wings on high, covering the Mercy Seat with their wings, and their faces shall look one to another; toward the Mercy Seat shall the faces of the cherubims be.

21 And thou shalt put the Mercy Seat above upon the Ark; and in the Ark thou shalt put the Testimony that I shall give thee. 22 And **there I will meet with thee**, and **I will commune with thee from above the Mercy Seat**, from between the two cherubims which are upon the Ark of the Testimony, of all things which I will give thee in Commandment unto the children of Israel."

Exodus / Chapter 31

And the LORD spake unto Moses, saying, 13 Speak thou also unto the children of Israel, saying, Verily My Sabbaths ye shall keep: for it is a Sign between Me and you throughout your generations; that ye may know that **I Am the LORD that doth SANCTIFY you.**"

We don't keep ourselves from sinning. We recognize the LORD's Will and Power-- we FEAR Him (i.e., give Him reverential trust)-- and by our own freewill which He gave to us, we put our wills into His keeping. We leave our wills in His keeping. And **for as long as** we leave our wills in His keeping, we do NOT sin. "For **it is God** which worketh in you both to will and to do of His Good Pleasure" (Philippians 2:13).

- (1Corinthians 12:6) "**God** which worketh ALL in all."
- (1Corinthians 15:10) "By the Grace of **God** I am what I am."
- (Hebrews 13:20-21) "The **God** of Peace... make you perfect in every good work to do His will, working in you that which is wellpleasing in His sight, **through Jesus Christ**; to Whom be Glory for ever and ever. Amen."

"14 Ye shall keep the Sabbath therefore; for it is holy unto you: every one that defileth it shall surely be put to death: for whosoever doeth any work therein, that soul shall be cut off from among his people. 15 Six days may work be done; but in the seventh is the Sabbath of rest, holy to the LORD: whosoever doeth any work in the Sabbath Day, he shall surely be put to death. 16 Wherefore the children of Israel shall keep the Sabbath, to observe the Sabbath throughout their generations, for a Perpetual Covenant. 17 It is a Sign between Me and the children of Israel for ever: for in six days the LORD made heaven and Earth, and on the seventh day He rested, and was refreshed.

18 And He gave unto Moses, when He had made an end of communing with him upon Mount Sinai, two tables of Testimony, tables of stone, **written with the Finger of God.**"

Exodus / Chapter 32

And when the people saw that Moses delayed to come down out of the mount, the people gathered themselves together unto Aaron, and said unto him, Up, make us gods, which shall go before us; for as for this Moses, the man that brought us up out of the land of Egypt, we wot not what is become of him."

Obedience is based on love. If it's not for the love that we have for the LORD, then it's NOT obedience. These rebellious children wasted no time in showing their true colors. And Aaron seized the moment for his own aggrandizement.

"2 And Aaron said unto them, Break off the golden earrings, which are in the ears of your wives, of your sons, and of your daughters, and bring them unto me.

3 And all the people brake off the golden earrings which were in their ears, and brought them unto Aaron. 4 And he received them at their hand, and fashioned it with a graving tool, after he had made it a molten calf: and they said, These be thy gods, O Israel, **which brought thee up** out of the land of Egypt."

How could Aaron, knowing God the way he did, being an instrument **in God's Own Hand** during the miracles performed in Egypt-- how could Aaron be so vile-- attributing divinity to an object made with **his own hand** as the "GOD" "which brought thee up out of the land of Egypt"? Take heed. "Ye therefore, beloved, seeing ye know these things before, beware lest ye also, being led away with the error of the wicked, fall from your own stedfastness" (2Peter 3:17). Any man can fall. And if a man who has been used so mightily by God can *so quickly and easily fall*-- so can you and I. "Take heed to yourselves, that your heart be not deceived, and ye turn aside, and serve other gods, and worship them" (Deuteronomy 11:16). Do a Bible study on "take heed". The **sheer number** of verses is a warning in itself!

- (Matthew 6:1) "Take heed that ye do not your alms before men, to be seen of them: otherwise ye have no reward of your Father which is in Heaven."
- (Matthew 16:6) "Then Jesus said unto them, Take heed and beware of the leaven of the Pharisees and of the Sadducees."
- (Matthew 18:10) "Take heed that ye despise not one of these little ones; for I say unto you, That in Heaven their angels do **always** behold the face of My Father which is in Heaven."
- (Matthew 24:4) "And Jesus answered and said unto them, Take heed that no man deceive you."
- (Mark 4:24) "And He said unto them, Take heed what ye hear: with what measure ye mete, it shall be measured to you: and unto you that hear shall more be given." etc...

"5 And when Aaron saw it, he built an altar before it; and Aaron made proclamation, and said, To morrow is a feast *to the LORD*.

6 And they rose up early on the morrow, and offered burnt offerings, and brought peace offerings; and the people sat down to eat and to drink, and rose up to play.

7 And the LORD said unto Moses, Go, get thee down; for thy people, which thou broughtest out of the land of Egypt, have corrupted themselves: 8 They have **turned aside quickly** out of the way which I

commanded them: they have made them a molten calf, and have worshipped it, and have sacrificed thereunto, and said, These be thy gods, O Israel, which have brought thee up out of the land of Egypt.

9 And the LORD said unto Moses, I have seen this people, and, behold, it is a **stiffnecked people**: 10 Now therefore **let Me alone, that My wrath may wax hot against them, and that I may consume them**: and I will make of thee a great nation.

11 And Moses besought the LORD his God, and said, LORD, why doth Thy wrath wax hot against Thy people, which Thou hast brought forth out of the land of Egypt with great power, and with a mighty hand? 12 **Wherefore should the Egyptians speak**, and say, For mischief did He bring them out, to slay them in the mountains, and to consume them from the face of the Earth? Turn from Thy fierce wrath, and repent [not of sin, of course, but to change His mind] of this evil against Thy people."

- (Numbers 23:19) "God is NOT a man, that He should lie; neither the son of man, that He should repent."

Moses knew his people deserved God's just punishment, but it was foremost in his mind that the LORD's reputation and glory among the heathen that he interceded for Israel. Meekness defends God, and, remember, Moses was-- by God's Own Mouth-- the meekest man "above all the men which were upon the face of the Earth" (Numbers 12:3).

Moses also knew there was a Bigger Plan involved, and that there was a Covenant made with Abraham, and being the meekest of men that he was-- defending God and not SELF--, he shied away from the honour that God was ready to give him. "I will make of thee a great nation."

- (Genesis 15:13-14) "13 And He said unto Abram, Know of a surety that thy seed shall be a stranger in a land that is not theirs, and shall serve them; and they shall afflict them four hundred years; 14 and also that nation, whom they shall serve, will I judge: and afterward shall they come out with great substance."
- (Genesis 22:16-18) "16 And said, By Myself have I sworn, saith the LORD, for because thou hast done this thing, and hast not withheld thy son, thine only son: 17 that in blessing I will bless thee, and in multiplying I will multiply thy seed as the stars of the heaven, and as the sand which is upon the sea shore; and thy seed shall possess the gate of his enemies; 18 and in thy seed shall all the nations of the Earth be blessed; because thou hast obeyed My Voice."
- (Exodus 2:24) "And God heard their groaning, and God remembered His Covenant with Abraham, with Isaac, and with Jacob."

Pleading with God, presenting your argument or case before Him, was best described by A. T. Pierson --

<http://WhatSaithTheScripture.com/Fellowship/A.T.Pierson.html> --, concerning God's prayer warrior, George Mueller --

<http://WhatSaithTheScripture.com/W.S.t.S.Voice.html#Mueller> --

"George Müller stored up reasons for God's intervention. As he came upon promises, authorized declarations of God concerning Himself, names and titles He had chosen to express and reveal His true nature and will, injunctions and invitations which gave to the believer a right to pray and boldness in supplication-- as he saw all these, fortified and exemplified by the instances of prevailing prayer, he laid these arguments up in memory, and then on occasions of great need brought them out and spread them before a prayer-hearing God. It is pathetically [pathos, or compassionately] beautiful to follow this humble man of God into the secret place, and there hear him pouring out his soul in these argumentative pleadings, as though he would so order his cause before God as to convince Him that He must interpose to save His own name and word

from dishonour!" --from "Pleading With God and Argument in Prayer" -- by A. T. Pierson, taken from "George Müller of Bristol" -- chapter 10: "The Word of God and Prayer."

"13 Remember Abraham, Isaac, and Israel, Thy servants, to whom Thou swarest by Thine Own Self, and saidst unto them, I will multiply your seed as the stars of heaven, and all this land that I have spoken of will I give unto your seed, and they shall inherit it for ever.

14 And the LORD repented of the evil which He thought to do unto His people."

As we mentioned before, when Scripture talks about God repenting, it is not for sin, of course, but simply that God is changing His mind. "The Judge of all the Earth" (Genesis 18:25) has the right to change His Omnipotent Mind.

"Just as Jeremiah threatened God's judgment upon Jerusalem, i.e., '4 If ye will not hearken to Me, to walk in My Law, which I have set before you... 6 Then will I make this house like Shiloh, and will make this city a curse to all the nations of the Earth' (Jeremiah 26:4,6), Micah had previously pronounced the certainty that 'Jerusalem shall become heaps' (26:18) to Hezekiah-- who believed him and caused reformation in the land.

The point was that Micah had pronounced the certainty of judgment against the land during Hezekiah's reign in Jerusalem. Micah prophesied that the 'LORD cometh [present tense, is coming] forth out of His place, and will come down, and tread upon the high places of the Earth' (Micah 1:3). The result will be that 'Jerusalem shall become heaps' (3:12). **Hezekiah led Judah in repentance before the prophecy could be fulfilled.** 'Notwithstanding Hezekiah humbled himself for the pride of his heart, both he and the inhabitants of Jerusalem, **so that the wrath of the LORD came not upon them** in the days of Hezekiah' (2Chronicles 32:26). But, who was complaining about the lack of fulfillment of Jerusalem's destruction, since '**the LORD repented Him of the evil** which He had pronounced against them' (Jeremiah 26:19)? A situation had developed which changed God's mind... As the LORD of All the Earth (Joshua 3:13) is sovereign in His judgments, **He is completely justified in holding back the fulfillment of a prophecy**-- that He promised by the mouth of His prophets. 'And God saw their works, that they turned from their evil way; and God repented of the evil, that He had said that He would do unto them; and **He did it not**' (Jonah 3:10). God can rightly and sovereignly change His mind about the fulfillment of something He said He would do. 'And the LORD **repented** of the evil which He thought to do unto His people' (Exodus 32:14)." --from "How to Identify A False Prophet" -- <http://WhatSaithTheScripture.com/Prophets/How.To.ID.False.Prophet.html> -- by Tom Stewart.

"15 And Moses turned, and went down from the mount, and the two tables of the Testimony were in his hand: the tables were written on both their sides; on the one side and on the other were they written. 16 And the tables were the work of God, and the writing was the writing of God, graven upon the tables.

17 And when Joshua heard the noise of the people as they shouted, he said unto Moses, There is a noise of war in the camp. 18 And he said, It is not the voice of them that shout for mastery, neither is it the voice of them that cry for being overcome: but the noise of them that **sing** do I hear.

19 And it came to pass, as soon as he came nigh unto the camp, that he saw the calf, and the dancing: and **Moses' anger waxed hot, and he cast the tables out of his hands, and brake them beneath the mount.**

20 And he took the calf which they had made, and burnt it in the fire, and ground it to powder, and strowed it upon the water, and made the children of Israel drink of it.

21 And Moses said unto Aaron, What did this people do unto thee, that thou hast brought so great a sin upon them?

22 And Aaron said, Let not the anger of my lord wax hot: thou knowest **the people**, that **they are set on mischief**. 23 For they said unto me, Make us gods, which shall go before us: for as for this Moses, the man that brought us up out of the land of Egypt, we wot not what is become of him. 24 And I said unto them, Whosoever hath any gold, let them break it off. So they gave it me: then **I cast it into the fire**, and **there came out this calf**."

Aaron spends a lot of time blaming others for his own sin. This is NOT repentance. How he makes what he did sound so simplistic. "I cast it into the fire, and there came out this calf." He makes it appear that this calf just happened miraculously. "Godly sorrow" (2Corinthians 7:10) in a man is the picture of abasement, self-denunciation, and reproach. There is no excuse for sin and the man of "Godly sorrow" makes no excuse whatever for his own sin. He freely admits his hatred of God and deeply feels he is the "chief" of "sinners" (1Timothy 1:15). [Please read "How to Deal with Backsliders" -- <http://WhatSaithTheScripture.com/Fellowship/How.to.Deal.with.Backslide.html> --, for a picture of what Biblical sorrow demonstrates.]

The Deuteronomy Account of the Breaking of the Tables

(Deuteronomy 9:16-20) "16 And I looked, and, behold, ye had sinned against the LORD your God, and had made you a molten calf: ye had turned aside quickly out of the way which the LORD had commanded you. 17 And I took the two tables, and cast them out of my two hands, and brake them before your eyes. 18 And I fell down before the LORD, as at the first, forty days and forty nights: I did neither eat bread, nor drink water, because of all your sins which ye sinned, in doing wickedly in the sight of the LORD, to provoke him to anger. 19 For I was afraid of the anger and hot displeasure, wherewith the LORD was wroth against you to destroy you. But the LORD hearkened unto me at that time also. 20 And the LORD was very angry with Aaron to have destroyed him: and I prayed for Aaron also the same time."

"25 And when Moses saw that the people were naked; (for **Aaron** had made them naked unto their shame among their enemies:) 26 then Moses stood in the gate of the camp, and said, **Who is on the LORD'S side? let him come unto me**. And all the sons of Levi gathered themselves together unto him."

Separation... a fact in this world as demonstrated clearly in our next world. "There is a great gulf fixed: so that they which would pass from hence [Heaven] to you [in Hell] cannot; neither can they pass to us, that would come from thence" (Luke 16:26). Only the pure in heart live with God in Heaven. "Blessed are the pure in heart: for they shall see God" (Matthew 5:8). The impure cannot enter the Gates Beautiful, for "there shall in no wise enter into it any thing that defileth, neither whatsoever worketh abomination, or maketh a lie" (Revelation 21:2). Those who will not separate from this world now will be separated into Hell later. "32 And before Him shall be gathered all nations: and He shall separate them one from another, as a shepherd divideth his sheep from the goats: 33 and He shall set the sheep on His Right Hand, but the goats on the left. 34 Then shall the King say unto them on His Right Hand, Come, ye blessed of My Father, inherit the Kingdom prepared for you from the foundation of the world... 41 Then shall He say also unto them on the left hand, Depart from Me, ye cursed, into Everlasting Fire, prepared for the Devil and his angels... 46 And these shall go away into Everlasting Punishment: but the righteous into Life Eternal" (Matthew 25:32-34,41,46).

"In January, 1834, all teachers who were not believers were dismissed from the Sunday-school; and, in the Dorcas Society, only believing sisters were accepted to make clothes for the destitute. The reason was that it had been found unwise and unwholesome to mix up or yoke together believers and unbelievers... Such association proved a barrier to spiritual converse and

injurious to both classes, fostering in the unbelievers a false security, ensnaring them in a delusive hope that to help in Christian work might somehow atone for rejection of Jesus Christ as a Saviour, or secure favour from God and an open door into heaven. No doubt all this indiscriminate association of children of God with children of the world in a 'mixed multitude' is unscriptural. Unregenerate persons are tempted to think there is some merit at least in mingling with worshippers and workers, and especially in giving to the support of the gospel and its institutions. The devil seeks to persuade such that it is acceptable to God to conform externally to religious rites and forms, and take part in outward acts of service and sacrifice, and that He will deal leniently with them, despite their unbelief and disobedience. Mr. Mueller and Mr. Craik felt keenly that this danger existed and that even in minor matters there must be a line of separation, for the sake of all involved." -- from "George Mueller of Bristol" -- by A. T. Pierson -- <http://WhatSaithTheScripture.com/Fellowship/A.T.Pierson.html> --, chapter 21: "The Church Life and Growth."

- (James 1:27) "Pure religion and undefiled before God and the Father is this, To visit the fatherless and widows in their affliction, and to keep himself **unspotted from the world.**"
- (1John 2:15) "**Love not the world**, neither the things that are in the world. If any man love the world, the love of the Father is not in him."
- (Romans 8:7) "Because **the carnal mind is enmity against God**: for it is not subject to the Law of God, neither indeed can be."
- (John 15:19) "If ye were of the world, the world would love his own: but because ye are not of the world, but I have chosen you out of the world, therefore **the world hateth you.**"
- (Matthew 6:24) "**No man can serve two masters**: for either he will hate the One, and love the other; or else he will hold to the One, and despise the other. Ye cannot serve God and mammon."
- (James 4:4) "Ye adulterers and adulteresses, know ye not that **the friendship of the world is enmity with God**? whosoever therefore will be **a friend of the world is the enemy of God.**"

"27 And he said unto them, Thus saith the LORD God of Israel, Put every man his sword by his side, and go in and out from gate to gate throughout the camp, and **slay every man his brother, and every man his companion, and every man his neighbour.**

28 And the children of Levi did according to the word of Moses: and there fell of the people that day about three thousand men. 29 For Moses had said, Consecrate yourselves to day to the LORD, even every man upon his son, and upon his brother; that he may bestow upon you a blessing this day.

30 And it came to pass on the morrow, that Moses said unto the people, Ye have sinned a great sin: and now I will go up unto the LORD; peradventure I shall make an atonement for your sin.

31 And Moses returned unto the LORD, and said, Oh, this people have sinned a great sin, and have made them gods of gold. 32 Yet now, if Thou wilt forgive their sin--; and if not, **blot me, I pray Thee, out of Thy Book** which Thou hast written."

A meek man defends God, not himself. Moses executed judgment, in God's behalf, and slew a great number of the idolaters. "And there fell of the people that day about three thousand men." Of those remaining, Moses makes intercession for them to the LORD. "**Peradventure** I shall make an atonement for your sin." He was hoping that the whole nation wouldn't need to die. There was still a Covenant; there was still a witness. But most of all, there was still the Glory of the LORD to be honoured. A debt for sin still needed to

be met. God's Glory demanded retribution. His Law required it and it must be paid. Moses offered himself, in Christ-like fashion, as a substitute for the sin of his nation. "**Blot me, I pray Thee, out of Thy Book.**" The Apostle Paul felt the same way when he said, "2 I have great heaviness and continual sorrow in my heart. 3 For I could wish that **myself were accursed from Christ for my brethren**, my kinsmen according to the flesh" (Romans 9:2-3). They were **willing** to pay an **Eternal Death** for **others!** (What trophies **are** Moses and Paul as everlasting testaments to the Inner Working of God's Great Love!) A debt truly needed to be paid. "Let them be blotted out of the Book of the Living, and not be written with the Righteous" (Psalm 69:28). But Moses and Paul-- as willing to substitute themselves as they were that "God's chosen people" not be blotted out of the Book of Life forever-- had not, in themselves, that Divine Ability and Power needed to accomplish that selfless goal. That is exactly why Christ Jesus died. No one else could pay that amount! Each man is liable for his own debt, and his own Eternal Punishment could only cover his own sin. Only God Himself, the Perfect Sacrifice, Who had NO debt for personal sin Himself, Who had the Omnipotence that only The Creator has, only He could pay the debt for others. And He did! "He died for ALL, that they which live should not henceforth live unto themselves, but unto Him which died for them, and rose again" (2Corinthians 5:15). "For God so Loved THE WORLD, that He gave His Only Begotten Son, that whosoever believeth in Him should *not perish*, but have Everlasting Life" (John 3:16). [Please read, "The Heart of the Gospel" -- <http://WhatSaithTheScripture.com/Voice/The.Heart.of.the.Gospel.html> --, by A. T. Pierson, (1837-1911), to understand how God accomplished this amazing Gift for us. And also, see our "Jehovah Jesus" section -- <http://WhatSaithTheScripture.com/WStS.Jehovah.html> -- for more on THE CROSS, and our "Topical Links On Salvation" -- <http://WhatSaithTheScripture.com/Jehovah/Topical.Links.Salvation.html> -- for help in receiving your own Paid Gift.]

"33 And the LORD said unto Moses, Whosoever **hath sinned** against Me, **him will I blot out** of My Book. 34 Therefore now go, lead the people unto the place of which I have spoken unto thee: behold, Mine Angel shall go before thee: nevertheless in the day when I visit I will visit their sin upon them.

35 And the LORD plagued the people, because they made the calf, which Aaron made."

Exodus / Chapter 33

And the LORD said unto Moses, Depart, and go up hence, thou and the people which thou hast brought up out of the land of Egypt, unto the land which I swore unto Abraham, to Isaac, and to Jacob, saying, Unto thy seed will I give it: 2 and I will send an angel before thee; and I will drive out the Canaanite, the Amorite, and the Hittite, and the Perizzite, the Hivite, and the Jebusite: 3 unto a land flowing with milk and honey: for I will not go up in the midst of thee; for thou art a stiffnecked people: lest I consume thee in the way. 4 And when the people heard these evil tidings, they mourned: and no man did put on him his ornaments. 5 For the LORD had said unto Moses, Say unto the children of Israel, Ye are a stiffnecked people: I will come up into the midst of thee in a moment, and consume thee: therefore now put off thy ornaments from thee, that I may know what to do unto thee. 6 And the children of Israel stripped themselves of their ornaments by the Mount Horeb. 7 And Moses took the Tabernacle, and pitched it without the camp, afar off from the camp, and called it the Tabernacle of the Congregation. And it came to pass, that every one which sought the LORD went out unto the Tabernacle of the Congregation, which was without the camp. 8 And it came to pass, when Moses went out unto the Tabernacle, that all the people rose up, and stood every man at his tent door, and looked after Moses, until he was gone into the Tabernacle.

Return to Exodus 8-- "Note"

"9 And it came to pass, as Moses entered into the Tabernacle, the Cloudy Pillar descended, and stood at the door of the Tabernacle, and the LORD talked with Moses. 10 And all the people saw the Cloudy Pillar stand at the Tabernacle door: and all the people rose up and worshipped, every man in his tent door. 11 And **the LORD spake unto Moses face to face, as a man speaketh unto his friend**. And he turned again into the camp: but his servant Joshua, the son of Nun, a young man, departed not out of the Tabernacle."

No earthbound man, not even Moses, has ever seen the face of God the Father. Who's face "no man can approach unto; Whom no man hath seen, nor can see: to Whom be honour and Power everlasting" (1Timothy 6:16), but Who is seen ONLY with the heart, this is "FAITH IN GOD" (Mark 11:22).

- (John 1:18) "No man hath seen God [the Father] at any time; the Only Begotten Son, Which is in the bosom of the Father, He hath declared Him."

And yet... "the LORD spake unto Moses face to face, as a man speaketh unto his friend." The Father in Heaven spoke to Moses as "face to face" as any earthbound man can. And the Father spoke as warmly and intimately as the Best Friend of any friends any man has ever had

- (Proverbs 18:24) "A man that hath friends must show himself friendly: and there is a Friend that sticketh closer than a brother."
- (Proverbs 17:17) "A friend loveth at all times."
- (John 15:14) "Ye are My friends, **if** ye do whatsoever I command you."

"12 And Moses said unto the LORD, See, Thou sayest unto me, Bring up this people: and Thou hast not let me know whom Thou wilt send with me. Yet Thou hast said, 'I know thee by name, and thou hast also found grace in My sight.' 13 Now therefore, I pray Thee, if I have found grace in Thy sight, show me now Thy way, that I may know Thee, that I may find grace in Thy sight: and consider that this nation is Thy people.

14 And He said, My Presence shall go with thee, and I will give thee rest.

15 And he said unto Him, If Thy Presence go not with me, carry us not up hence. 16 For wherein shall it be known here that I and Thy people have found grace in Thy sight? **is it not in that Thou goest with us?** so shall we be separated, I and Thy people, from all the people that are upon the face of the Earth.

17 And the LORD said unto Moses, I will do this thing also that thou hast spoken: for thou hast found grace in My sight, and I know thee by name."

What makes God's people different from all other people in the world? He goes WITH us! "Behold, a virgin shall be with Child, and shall bring forth a Son, and they shall call His Name Emmanuel, which being interpreted is, **God with us**" (Matthew 1:23).

- (Psalm 46:7) "The LORD of hosts is with us; the God of Jacob is our Refuge. Selah."
- (Isaiah 8:10) "Take counsel together, and it shall come to nought; speak the word, and it shall not stand: for God is with us."
- (Matthew 28:20) "Lo, I Am with you always, even unto The End of the world. Amen."
- (2Timothy 4:22) "The LORD Jesus Christ be with thy spirit. Grace be with you. Amen."

"18 And he said, I beseech Thee, show me Thy Glory.

19 And He said, I will make ALL My GOODNESS pass before thee, and I will proclaim the Name of the LORD before thee; and will be gracious to whom I will be gracious, and will show mercy on whom I will show mercy. 20 And he said, Thou canst NOT see My face: for there shall no man see Me, and live. 21 And

the LORD said, Behold, there is a place by Me, and thou shalt stand upon a rock: 22 and it shall come to pass, while My Glory passeth by, that I will put thee in a clift of the rock, and will cover thee with My hand while I pass by: 23 And I will take away Mine hand, and **thou shalt see My back parts: but My face shall not be seen.**"

So it was that Moses, while on this Earth, did NOT see the Father's face, even though, as Scripture tells us, Moses did speak with the LORD (i.e., "the LORD spake unto Moses face to face, as a man speaketh unto his friend") on the friendliest terms that man can possibly be with Almighty God. Moses did not see the Father's face, yet I will ask, "What man in the flesh has ever seen *any part* of the Heavenly Father's spiritual body?" What human, while in the flesh of this life, has ever been as honoured by the Father, in this manner, as Moses was that day in the "clift of the rock"? "Canst thou by searching find out God?" (Job 11:7). "Who only hath Immortality, dwelling in the Light which no man can approach unto; Whom no man hath seen, nor can see: to Whom be honour and power everlasting. Amen" (1Timothy 6:16).

- Moses was chosen by God to represent Himself to Israel. "2 And Moses alone shall come near the LORD: but they shall not come nigh; neither shall the people go up with him. 3 And Moses came and told the people all the Words of the LORD, and all the Judgments: and all the people answered with one voice, and said, All the Words which the LORD hath said will we do" (Exodus 24:2-3).
- Moses stood in the place of God before the children of Israel. "I stood between the LORD and you at that time, to show you the Word of the LORD: for ye were afraid by reason of the fire, and went not up into the mount" (Deuteronomy 5:5). The people, because of their hard hearts, didn't trust the LORD to draw nigh to Him. "And the people stood afar off, and Moses drew near unto the thick darkness where God was" (Exodus 20:21).
- Moses honoured God and God honoured Moses. "With him will I speak mouth to mouth, even apparently, and not in dark speeches; and the similitude of the LORD shall he behold: wherefore then were ye not afraid to speak against my servant Moses?" (Numbers 12:8). "Wherefore the LORD God of Israel saith... them that honour Me I will honour" (1Samuel 2:30).
- Moses demonstrated that he had a pure heart towards God. "Let us draw near with a true heart in full assurance of FAITH, having our hearts sprinkled from an evil conscience, and our bodies washed with pure water" (Hebrews 10:22).

"And the LORD said unto Moses,
I will do this thing also that thou hast spoken:
for thou hast found grace in My sight, and I know thee by name."

Exodus / Chapter 34

And the LORD said unto Moses, Hew thee two tables of stone like unto the first: and I will write upon these tables the Words that were in the first tables, which thou brakest. 2 And be ready in the morning, and come up in the morning unto Mount Sinai, and present thyself there to Me in the top of the mount. 3 And no man shall come up with thee, neither let any man be seen throughout all the mount; neither let the flocks nor herds feed before that mount.

4 And he hewed two tables of stone like unto the first; and Moses rose up early in the morning, and went up unto Mount Sinai, as the LORD had commanded him, and took in his hand the two tables of stone.

5 And the LORD descended in the Cloud, and **stood with him there**, and proclaimed the Name of the LORD. 6 And the LORD **passed by before him**, and proclaimed, The LORD, The LORD God, merciful

and gracious, longsuffering, and abundant in goodness and Truth, 7 Keeping mercy for thousands, forgiving iniquity and transgression and sin, and that **will by no means clear the guilty**; visiting the iniquity of the fathers upon the children, and upon the children's children, unto the third and to the fourth generation.

8 And Moses made haste, and bowed his head toward the Earth, and worshipped. 9 And he said, If now I have found grace in Thy sight, O LORD, let my LORD, I pray Thee, go among us; for it is a stiffnecked people; and pardon our iniquity and our sin, and take us for Thine inheritance.

10 And He said, Behold, I make a Covenant: before all thy people I will do marvels, such as have not been done in all the Earth, nor in any nation: and all the people among which thou art shall see the Work of the LORD: for it is a terrible thing that I will do with thee. 11 Observe thou that which I command thee this day: behold, I drive out before thee the Amorite, and the Canaanite, and the Hittite, and the Perizzite, and the Hivite, and the Jebusite. 12 Take heed to thyself, lest thou make a covenant with the inhabitants of the land whither thou goest, lest it be for a snare in the midst of thee: 13 but ye shall destroy their altars, break their images, and cut down their groves: 14 for thou shalt worship no other god: **for the LORD, whose Name is Jealous, is a jealous God**: 15 lest thou make a covenant with the inhabitants of the land, and they go a whoring after their gods, and do sacrifice unto their gods, and one call thee, and thou eat of his sacrifice; 16 and thou take of their daughters unto thy sons, and their daughters go a whoring after their gods, and make thy sons go a whoring after their gods. 17 Thou shalt make thee no molten gods. 18 The feast of unleavened bread shalt thou keep. Seven days thou shalt eat unleavened bread, as I commanded thee, in the time of the month Abib: for in the month Abib thou camest out from Egypt. 19 All that openeth the matrix is Mine; and every firstling among thy cattle, whether ox or sheep, that is male. 20 But the firstling of an ass thou shalt redeem with a lamb: and if thou redeem him not, then shalt thou break his neck. All the firstborn of thy sons thou shalt redeem. And none shall appear before Me empty. 21 Six days thou shalt work, but on the seventh day thou shalt rest: in earing time and in harvest thou shalt rest. 22 And thou shalt observe the feast of weeks, of the firstfruits of wheat harvest, and the feast of ingathering at the year's end. 23 Thrice in the year shall all your menchildren appear before the LORD GOD, the God of Israel. 24 For I will cast out the nations before thee, and enlarge thy borders: neither shall any man desire thy land, when thou shalt go up to appear before the LORD thy God thrice in the year. 25 Thou shalt **not** offer the blood of My sacrifice with leaven [Biblically symbolic of sin]; neither shall the sacrifice of the feast of the Passover be left unto the morning. 26 The first of the firstfruits of thy land thou shalt bring unto the house of the LORD thy God. Thou shalt not seethe a kid in his mother's milk. 27 And the LORD said unto Moses, Write thou these Words: for after the tenor of these Words I have made a Covenant with thee and with Israel.

28 And he was there with the LORD forty days and forty nights; **he did neither eat bread, nor drink water**. And he wrote upon the tables the Words of the Covenant, the Ten Commandments.

29 And it came to pass, when Moses came down from Mount Sinai with the two tables of Testimony in Moses' hand, when he came down from the mount, that Moses wist not that **the skin of his face shone while he talked with Him**. 30 And when Aaron and all the children of Israel saw Moses, behold, the skin of his face shone; and they were afraid to come nigh him. 31 And Moses called unto them; and Aaron and all the rulers of the congregation returned unto him: and Moses talked with them. 32 And afterward all the children of Israel came nigh: and he gave them in Commandment all that the LORD had spoken with him in Mount Sinai. 33 And till Moses had done speaking with them, he put a veil on his face. 34 But when Moses went in before the LORD to speak with Him, he took the veil off, until he came out. And he came out, and spake unto the children of Israel that which he was commanded. 35 And the children of Israel saw the face of Moses, that the skin of Moses' face shone: and Moses put the veil upon his face again, until he went in to speak with Him."

"One result of communion with God is to make us tender of all that respects God's honor. Moses forgot himself; he had no room for thought of self; hence God was able to clothe him

with a halo of glory. An earthly king likes to clothe his servants in fine robes, and God is pleased when we enable him to bless us. -- ANDREW A. BONAR." --from "For Each New Day"

Moses' face shone with the Glory of the LORD as a visible warning to the people that Moses had truly been with the LORD. Therefore, the Words which Moses gave the people, were God's Words, commanded by God, and were to be obeyed.

"20 The Redeemer shall come to Zion,
and unto them that turn from transgression in Jacob, saith the LORD.

21 As for Me, this is My Covenant with them, saith the LORD;
My Spirit that is upon thee, and My Words which I have put in thy mouth,
shall not depart out of thy mouth, nor out of the mouth of thy seed,
nor out of the mouth of thy seed's seed, saith the LORD,
from henceforth and for ever.

1 Arise, shine; for thy Light is come, and the Glory of the LORD is risen upon thee.

2 For, behold, the darkness shall cover the Earth, and gross darkness the people:

but **the LORD shall arise upon thee,**
and **His Glory shall be seen upon thee"**

(Isaiah 59:20-60:2).

"For God, Who commanded the Light to shine out of darkness,
hath shined in our hearts,

to give the Light of the Knowledge of the Glory of God
in the face of Jesus Christ"

(2Corinthians 4:6).

Exodus / Chapter 40

And the LORD spake unto Moses, saying, 2 On the first day of the first month shalt thou set up the Tabernacle of the tent of the congregation. 3 And thou shalt put therein the Ark of the Testimony, and cover the Ark with the veil. 4 And thou shalt bring in the table, and set in order the things that are to be set in order upon it; and thou shalt bring in the candlestick, and light the lamps thereof. 5 And thou shalt set the altar of gold for the incense before the Ark of the Testimony, and put the hanging of the door to the Tabernacle. 6 And thou shalt set the altar of the burnt offering before the door of the Tabernacle of the tent of the congregation. 7 And thou shalt set the laver between the tent of the congregation and the altar, and shalt put water therein. 8 And thou shalt set up the court round about, and hang up the hanging at the court gate. 9 And thou shalt take the anointing oil, and anoint the Tabernacle, and all that is therein, and shalt hallow it, and all the vessels thereof: and **it shall be holy.**"

With all the ceremony, the impression that the LORD intended to make upon His people was, "Be ye holy; for I Am Holy" (1Peter 1:16). Don't take the LORD for granted! He is God Almighty and DESERVES to be obeyed. "Sanctify yourselves therefore, and be ye holy: for I Am the LORD your God" (Leviticus 20:7). Treat the LORD God with an especial respect. Go the extra mile for Him. No one justifies more of your attention nor is more worthy of your resources. "Neither will I offer burnt offerings unto the LORD my God of that which doth cost me nothing" (2Samuel 24:24).

"13 And thou shalt put upon Aaron the holy garments, and anoint him, and sanctify him; that he may minister unto Me in the priest's office. 14 And thou shalt bring his sons, and clothe them with coats: 15 and thou shalt anoint them, as thou didst anoint their father, that they may minister unto Me in the priest's office:

for their anointing shall surely be an everlasting priesthood throughout their generations.

16 Thus did Moses: according to ALL that the LORD commanded him, so did he...

"18 And Moses reared up the Tabernacle, and fastened his sockets, and set up the boards thereof, and put in the bars thereof, and reared up his pillars. 19 And he spread abroad the tent over the Tabernacle, and put the covering of the tent above upon it; **as the LORD commanded Moses.** 20 And he took and put the Testimony into the Ark, and set the staves on the Ark, and put the Mercy Seat above upon the Ark: 21 and he brought the Ark into the Tabernacle, and set up the veil of the covering, and covered the Ark of the Testimony; **as the LORD commanded Moses...** 25 And he lighted the lamps before the LORD; **as the LORD commanded Moses...** 27 **as the LORD commanded Moses.** 29 **...as the LORD commanded Moses.** 31 **as the LORD commanded Moses.** 33 **...So Moses finished the work."**

There is no replacement for obedience before the LORD. "as the LORD commanded Moses... So Moses finished the work." His Word is His Command, and as God, obedience is due service. "Behold, to obey is better than sacrifice, and to hearken than the fat of rams" (1Samuel 15:22).

"34 Then a Cloud covered the tent of the congregation, and the Glory of the LORD filled the Tabernacle. 35 And Moses was not able to enter into the tent of the congregation, because the Cloud abode thereon, and the Glory of the LORD filled the Tabernacle. 36 And when the Cloud was taken up from over the Tabernacle, the children of Israel went onward in all their journeys: 37 But if the Cloud were not taken up, then they journeyed not till the day that it was taken up. 38 For the Cloud of the LORD was upon the Tabernacle by day, and Fire was on it by night, **in the sight of all the house of Israel, throughout all their journeys."**

LEVITICUS

Chapter 1

And the LORD called unto Moses, and spake unto him out of the Tabernacle of the Congregation, saying, 2 Speak unto the children of Israel, and say unto them, If any man of you bring an offering unto the LORD, ye shall bring your offering of the cattle, even of the herd, and of the flock. 3 If his offering be a burnt sacrifice of the herd, **let him offer a male without blemish:** he shall **offer it of his own voluntary will** at the door of the Tabernacle of the Congregation before the LORD. 4 And he shall put his hand upon the head of the burnt offering; and it shall be accepted for him **to make atonement for him."**

The "atonement", that is, the shedding of blood for the forgiveness of sins, was instituted by the LORD to fulfill the Law. For God's Righteous Law demanded that "every transgression and disobedience received a just recompense of reward" (Hebrews 2:2). The offering had to be "male", and had to be "without blemish" (i.e., perfect). And the moral giving of the sacrifice had to be "voluntary". The New Testament Book of Hebrews, of which the Apostle Paul is commonly thought to have authored, gives the account of this establishing as instituted by the LORD's Own servant, Moses. "19 For when Moses had spoken every Precept to all the people according to the Law, he took the blood of calves and of goats, with water, and scarlet wool, and hyssop, and sprinkled both the Book, and all the people, 20 saying,

This is the blood of the Testament which God hath enjoined unto you.

21 Moreover he sprinkled with blood both the Tabernacle, and all the vessels of the ministry. 22 And almost all things are by the Law purged with blood; and **without shedding of blood is no remission.** 23 It was therefore necessary that the **patterns** of things in the Heavens should be purified with these; but the Heavenly Things themselves with better sacrifices than these. 24 For Christ is not entered into the holy places made with hands, which are the **figures** of the True; **but into Heaven itself, now to appear in the**

Presence of God for us: 25 nor yet that He should offer Himself *often*, as the high priest entereth into the holy place *every year* with blood of others; 26 for then must He *often* have suffered since the foundation of the world: **but now ONCE** in the end of the world hath He appeared **to put away sin by the Sacrifice of Himself**" (Hebrews 9:19-26).

"For Christ also hath **once** suffered for sins, **the Just for the unjust**, that He might **bring us to God**" (1Peter 3:18). The "Atonement" is "at-one-ment" with God through the unselfish Sacrifice made by Jesus Christ. "We also JOY in God through our LORD Jesus Christ, by Whom we have now received The Atonement" (Romans 5:11). The fact that the word "atonement" is used **only once** in the New Testament testifies to the **completeness** of the act. "10 We are sanctified through the offering of the Body of Jesus Christ **once** for all... 12 But this Man, after He had offered **One Sacrifice** for sins for ever, sat down on the Right Hand of God... 14 for by **One Offering** He hath perfected for ever them that are sanctified" (Hebrews 10:10,12,14).

"Who needeth NOT DAILY,
as those high priests,
to offer up sacrifice, first for His Own sins, and then for the people's:
for this He did **once**, when He offered up Himself"
(Hebrews 7:27).

"So Christ was **once** offered
to bear the sins of many;
and unto them that look for Him
shall He appear the Second Time without sin unto Salvation"
(Hebrews 9:28).

"Neither by the blood of goats and calves,
but by **His Own Blood**
He entered in **once** into the Holy Place,
having obtained Eternal Redemption for us"
(Hebrews 9:12).

If the Old Testament "patterns" and "figures" (Hebrews 9:23-24) instituted by Moses and repeated often by the priests by the offering up of the blood of animals, could work sanctification in God's people, then for us now, "how much MORE shall the BLOOD OF CHRIST, Who through the Eternal Spirit offered Himself **without spot** to God, **PURGE your conscience from dead works to SERVE the living God?**" (Hebrews 9:14).

- (Ephesians 5:2) "And walk in love, as Christ also hath loved us, and hath given Himself for us an Offering and a Sacrifice to God for a Sweet-smelling Savour."
- (Titus 2:14) "Who gave Himself for us, that He might redeem us **from all iniquity**, and purify unto Himself a peculiar people, **zealous of good works.**" [Please read "He Will Subdue" and "Must We Then"]

SIDE NOTE: A Plea to the Professing Christian Who Continues in Sin. Beloved reader, "*whosoever* abideth in Him **sinneth not**: *whosoever* sinneth hath not seen Him, neither known Him" (1John 3:6). Your assurance in Christ is only as solid as your conscience will allow. "Beloved, if our heart condemn us not, THEN have we confidence toward God" (1John 3:21). It's easy to claim Christ Jesus as your own, thereby thinking to escape the Eternal Punishment of Hell. But, "he that saith he abideth in Him ought himself also so to walk, even as He walked" (1John 2:6). God's Word says that the PROOF of your claim is seen in the life that you live. "He that saith, I know Him, and KEEPETH NOT His Commandments, is a liar, and the Truth is NOT in him" (1John 2:4). "But wilt thou know, O vain man, that faith without works is dead?... For as the body without the spirit is dead, so faith without works is dead also" (James 2:20,26).

Your "knowing"-- your "assurance"-- that you are a Christian is only a product of the Holy Spirit's testimony. "And hereby we do KNOW that we know Him, IF we keep His Commandments" (1John 2:3). And the Holy Spirit is given ONLY to those who obey Him. "The Holy Ghost, Whom God hath given to them that obey Him" (Acts 5:32). Yes, Christ died that you might live-- and yes, live now in Christ as well as eternally in Heaven-- but Christ also died that you would quit sin-- the present tense **committing** of it! "He that committeth sin is of the Devil; for the Devil sinneth from The Beginning. **For this purpose** the Son of God was manifested, that He might **destroy** the works of the Devil" (1John 3:8).

- (1John 3:9) "Whosoever is born of God doth NOT commit sin; for His Seed [the WORD (1Peter 1:23)] remaineth in him: and he cannot sin [or, will not sin], because he is born of God."
- (3John 1:11) "Beloved, follow not that which is evil, but that which is Good. He that doeth Good is of God: but he that doeth evil hath not seen God."

That a Christian is able to sin and can fall away, yes, that shamefully happens. But he cannot sin **at the same time** that the Word abides in him. "We know that whosoever is born of God sinneth not; but he that is begotten of God **keepeth himself**, and that wicked one toucheth him not" (1John 5:18). The backslider has no right to the Name of Christ while in that sin. "Of how much SORER punishment, suppose ye, shall he be thought worthy, who hath trodden under foot the Son of God, and hath counted the Blood of the Covenant, wherewith he was sanctified, an unholy thing, and hath done despite unto the Spirit of grace?" (Hebrews 10:29). But that a Christian **continues** in sin-- what right has he to even call himself a Christian? It's NOT a matter of losing your Salvation. Scripture is clear that no one can lose Life that is Eternal. "My Father, which gave them Me, is Greater than all; and no man is able to pluck them out of My Father's Hand" (John 10:29). But what present tense evidence is there that you EVER were a Christian? The following verses all demonstrate present tense obedience or disobedience-- and as far as man's eternal condition and knowledge are concerned, present tense defines the future.

- (John 15:10) "**If ye keep My Commandments, ye shall abide** in My love; even as I **have kept My Father's Commandments, and abide** in His love."
- (John 14:23) "Jesus answered and said unto him, **If a man love Me, he will keep My Words**: and My Father will love him, and we will come unto him, and make Our abode with him."
- (John 14:15) "**If ye love Me, keep My Commandments.**"
- (1Corinthians 8:3) "If any man **love God, the same is known** of Him."
- (1John 2:15) "Love not the world, neither the things that are in the world. If any man **love the world**, the love of the Father **is not in him.**"
- (1John 4:12) "**If we love one another, God dwelleth in us**, and His love is perfected in us."
- (1John 4:20) "If a man say, I **love God, and hateth his brother, he is a liar.**"

Even in hoping what is yet to be, the present tense determines the future.

- (Psalm 80:3) "**Turn us** again, O God, and cause thy face to shine; and we **shall be saved.**"
- (Proverbs 28:18) "Whoso **walketh** uprightly **shall be saved**: but he that **is perverse** in his ways **shall fall** at once."
- (Mark 16:16) "He that **believeth and is baptized shall be saved**; but he that **believeth not shall be damned.**"
- (Acts 15:11) "But we **believe** that through the Grace of the LORD Jesus Christ we **shall be saved**, even as they."
- (Romans 5:9) "Much more then, **being now justified** by His Blood, we **shall be saved** from Wrath through

Him."

"Brethren, give diligence to make your calling and election sure: for if ye **DO** these things, ye shall never fall" (2Peter 1:10).

- (2Peter 3:17) "Ye therefore, beloved, seeing ye **KNOW** these things before, beware lest ye also, being led away with the error of the wicked, fall from your own stedfastness."
- (1Corinthians 10:12) "Wherefore let him that thinketh he standeth **take heed** lest he fall."
- (Revelation 2:5) "**Remember** therefore from whence thou art fallen, and repent, and do the first works; or else I will come unto thee quickly, and will remove thy candlestick out of his place, except thou repent."

FAITH is alive. FAITH is present tense. "My little children, let us not love in word, neither in tongue; but in deed and in Truth. And **hereby** we KNOW that we are of the Truth, and shall ASSURE our hearts before Him" (1John 3:18). What excuse can there possibly be for professing Christians to continue in sin? "Take heed, brethren, lest there be in any of you an evil heart of unbelief, in departing from the Living God" (Hebrews 3:12). With The Gift that Christ Jesus paid for, there is NO excuse for sin. "Wherefore Jesus also, that He might **sanctify the people with HIS OWN BLOOD**" (Hebrews 13:12). Therefore, beloved, "let us draw near with a TRUE heart in FULL ASSURANCE of FAITH, having our hearts sprinkled from an evil conscience" (Hebrews 10:22). And "keep yourselves in the love of God, looking for the Mercy of our LORD Jesus Christ unto Eternal Life" (Jude 1:21).

"And we know that the Son of God is come,
and hath given us an understanding,
that we may KNOW Him that is True, and we ARE IN Him that is True,
even in His Son Jesus Christ.
This is the True God, and Eternal Life"
(1John 5:20).

NUMBERS

Numbers / Chapter 11

And when the people complained, it displeased the LORD: and the LORD heard it; and His anger was kindled; and the fire of the LORD burnt among them, and consumed them that were in the uttermost parts of the camp. 2 And the people cried unto Moses; and when **Moses prayed unto the LORD**, the fire was quenched. 3 And he called the name of the place Taberah: because the fire of the LORD burnt among them. 4 And the mixed multitude that was among them *fell a lusting*: and the children of Israel also wept again, and said, **Who** shall give us flesh to eat? 5 We remember the fish, which we did eat in Egypt freely; the cucumbers, and the melons, and the leeks, and the onions, and the garlic: 6 but now our soul is dried away: *there is nothing at all, beside this manna*, before our eyes."

"7 And the manna **was as coriander seed**, and the colour thereof as the colour of bdellium. 8 And the people went about, and gathered it, and **ground it in mills**, or beat it in a mortar, and baked it in pans, and **made cakes of it**: and the taste of it was **as the taste of fresh oil**."

In the Scriptures, oil is often identified with the Holy Spirit.

"9 And when the dew fell upon the camp in the night, the manna fell upon it. 10 Then Moses heard the people weep throughout their families, every man in the door of his tent: and the anger of the LORD was kindled greatly; Moses also was displeased.

11 And Moses said unto the LORD, Wherefore hast Thou afflicted **Thy servant**? and wherefore have I not found favour in Thy sight, that Thou layest the burden of all this people upon me? 12 Have I conceived all

this people? have I begotten them, that Thou shouldest say unto me, Carry them in thy bosom, as a nursing father beareth the sucking child, unto the land which thou swarest unto their fathers? 13 Whence should I have flesh to give unto all this people? for they weep unto me, saying, Give us flesh, that we may eat. 14 I am not able to bear all this people alone, because it is too heavy for me. 15 And if Thou deal thus with me, kill me, I pray Thee, out of hand, if I have found favour in Thy sight; and let me not see my wretchedness.

16 And the LORD said unto Moses, Gather unto Me seventy men of the elders of Israel, whom thou knowest to be the elders of the people, and officers over them; and bring them unto the Tabernacle of the Congregation, that they may stand there with thee. 17 And I will come down and talk with thee there: and I will take of the Spirit which is upon thee, and will put it upon them; and they shall bear the burden of the people with thee, that thou bear it not thyself alone.

18 And say thou unto the people, Sanctify yourselves against to morrow, and ye shall eat flesh: for ye have wept in the ears of the LORD, saying, **Who shall give us flesh to eat? for it was well with us in Egypt:** therefore the LORD will give you flesh, and ye shall eat. 19 Ye shall not eat one day, nor two days, nor five days, neither ten days, nor twenty days; 20 but even a whole month, until it come out at your nostrils, and it be loathsome unto you: because that ye have despised the LORD which is among you, and have wept before Him, saying, **Why came we forth out of Egypt?**

21 And Moses said, The people, among whom I am, are six hundred thousand footmen; and Thou hast said, I will give them flesh, that they may eat a whole month. 22 Shall the flocks and the herds be slain for them, to suffice them? or shall all the fish of the sea be gathered together for them, to suffice them?

23 And the LORD said unto Moses, Is the LORD'S hand waxed short? thou shalt see now whether My Word shall come to pass unto thee or not.

24 And Moses went out, and told the people the Words of the LORD, and gathered the seventy men of the elders of the people, and set them round about the Tabernacle. 25 And the LORD came down in a cloud, and spake unto him, and took of the Spirit that was upon him, and gave it unto the seventy elders: and it came to pass, that, when the spirit rested upon them, they prophesied, and did not cease.

"31 And there went forth a Wind from the LORD, and brought quails from the sea, and let them fall by the camp, as it were a day's journey on this side, and as it were a day's journey on the other side, round about the camp, and as it were two cubits high upon the face of the Earth. 32 And the people stood up all that day, and all that night, and all the next day, and they gathered the quails: he that gathered least gathered ten homers: and they spread them all abroad for themselves round about the camp. 33 **And while the flesh was yet between their teeth, ere it was chewed, the wrath of the LORD was kindled against the people, and the LORD smote the people with a very great plague.** 34 And He called the name of that place Kibrothhattaavah: because there **they buried the people that lusted.**"

Numbers / Chapter 12

Return to Exodus 3

"1 And Miriam and Aaron spake against Moses because of the Ethiopian woman whom he had married: for he had married an Ethiopian woman. 2 And they said, Hath the LORD indeed spoken *only* by Moses? hath He not spoken also by us? And the LORD heard it."

When we commit sin, as Miriam and Aaron so arrogantly did here, it should cause us to tremble and quake to the point of repentance, that "the LORD heard it."

"3 (Now the man Moses was very meek, above all the men which were upon the face of the Earth.) 4

And the LORD spake **suddenly** unto Moses, and unto Aaron, and unto Miriam, Come out ye three unto the Tabernacle of the Congregation. And they three came out."

True meekness defends God-- not self. And being the meekest man "above all the men which were upon the face of the Earth", as credited by God, Himself, Moses certainly didn't defend himself. He also didn't need to-- for the Meekest Being in Existence was about to defend him, and as none else could. "Come out ye three", "suddenly" determines the LORD, preparing the way, as Defense Attorney in the case of His servant, Moses. And then, acting also as "the Judge of all the Earth" (Genesis 18:25), He calls the two offenders to stand before Him.

"5 And the LORD came down in the pillar of the cloud, and stood in the door of the Tabernacle, and called Aaron and Miriam: and they both came forth. 6 And He said, Hear now MY Words: If there be a prophet among you, I the LORD will make Myself known unto him in a vision, and will speak unto him in a dream."

To any "ordinary" prophet of the LORD, Divine communication comes "unto him in a vision" or "in a dream". Not so with Moses. He was NOT your "ordinary" prophet!

"7 **My servant Moses** is NOT so, who is FAITHFUL in all Mine house. 8 With him will I speak **mouth to mouth**, even **apparently**, and NOT in dark speeches; and **the similitude of the LORD shall he behold**: WHEREFORE THEN were ye not afraid to speak against **My servant Moses**?"

With great restraint, the LORD presides over the offenders, not allowing them the freedom of opening "excuses" nor closing "arguments." His anger kindles, and He leaves them with the Judgment already executed.

"9 And the anger of the LORD was kindled against them; and He departed. 10 And the cloud departed from off the Tabernacle; and, behold, Miriam became leprous, white as snow: and Aaron looked upon Miriam, and, behold, she was leprous."

- (Psalm 9:16) "The LORD is known by the Judgment which He executeth: the wicked is snared in the work of [her] own hands. Higgaion. Selah."

"11 And Aaron said unto Moses, Alas, my lord, I beseech thee, lay not the sin upon us, wherein we have done foolishly, and wherein we have sinned. 12 Let her not be as one dead, of whom the flesh is half consumed when he cometh out of his mother's womb."

What does the meekest man on Earth do?

"13 And Moses cried unto the LORD, saying, Heal her now, O God, I beseech Thee."

He intercedes to the LORD for the person who offended him. And the LORD hears a meek man, for "the meek shall inherit the Earth" (Psalm 37:11).

"14 And the LORD said unto Moses, If her father had but spit in her face, should she not be ashamed seven days? let her be shut out from the camp seven days, and after that let her be received in again. 15 And Miriam was shut out from the camp seven days: and the people journeyed not till Miriam was brought in again."

Numbers / Chapter 20

Return to Exodus 5

"1 Then came the children of Israel, even the whole congregation, into the desert of Zin in the first month: and the people abode in Kadesh; and Miriam died there, and was buried there."

We have reached the point in this recounting of Moses where the great servant of the LORD, and his siblings, are ending their sojourning on this Earth.

- "Thou shalt come to thy grave in a full age, like as a shock of corn cometh in in his season" (Job 5:26).

"2 And there was no water for the congregation: and they gathered themselves together against Moses and against Aaron.

3 And the people chided with Moses, and spake, saying, Would God that we had died when our brethren died before the LORD! 4 And why have ye brought up the congregation of the LORD into this wilderness, that we and our cattle should die there? 5 And wherefore have ye **made us to come** up out of Egypt, to bring us in unto this **evil** place? it is no place of seed, or of figs, or of vines, or of pomegranates; neither is there any water to drink.

6 And Moses and Aaron went from the presence of the assembly unto the door of the Tabernacle of the Congregation, and they fell upon their faces: and the Glory of the LORD appeared unto them.

7 And the LORD spake unto Moses, saying, 8 Take the rod, and gather thou the assembly together, thou, and Aaron thy brother, and **speak ye** unto the rock before their eyes; and it shall give forth his water, and thou shalt bring forth to them water out of the rock: so thou shalt give the congregation and their beasts drink.

9 And Moses took the rod from before the LORD, as He commanded him. 10 And Moses and Aaron gathered the congregation together before the rock, and he said unto them, Hear now, ye rebels; must we fetch you water out of this rock? 11 And Moses lifted up his hand, and with his rod **he smote the rock twice**: and the water came out abundantly, and the congregation drank, and their beasts also."

Moses disobeyed the LORD. God told him to speak to the rock, not to hit it twice. It would have been more glorifying to the LORD, and had a more sanctifying effect on the people, if Moses had obeyed the LORD and brought forth the water from the rock by merely speaking the words. The LORD knew what effect He wanted. If He had wanted His servant to strike the rock, He would have told him so. But the children of Israel had provoked Moses to wrath and disobedience.

- (Numbers 32:23) "If ye will not do so, behold, ye have sinned against the LORD: and be sure your sin will find you out."
- (Proverbs 20:11) "Even a child is known by his doings, whether his work be pure, and whether it be right."
- (1John 3:20-21) "20 For if our heart condemn us, God is greater than our heart, and knoweth all things. 21 Beloved, if our heart condemn us not, then have we confidence toward God."

"12 And the LORD spake unto Moses and Aaron, **Because ye believed me NOT, to SANCTIFY Me in the eyes of the children of Israel**, therefore ye shall not bring this congregation into the land which I have given them. 13 This is the water of Meribah, because the children of Israel strove with the LORD...

23 And the LORD spake unto Moses and Aaron in Mount Hor, by the coast of the land of Edom, saying, 24

Aaron shall be gathered unto his people: for he shall NOT enter into the land which I have given unto the children of Israel, because ye rebelled against My Word at the water of Meribah... 28 And Moses stripped Aaron of his garments, and put them upon Eleazar his son; and Aaron died there in the top of the mount: and Moses and Eleazar came down from the mount. 29 And when all the congregation saw that Aaron was dead, they mourned for Aaron thirty days, even all the house of Israel."

More will be said of Moses' punishment and death subsequently.

Numbers / Chapter 25

Return to Exodus 3

"1 And Israel abode in Shittim, and the people began to commit whoredom with the daughters of Moab. 2 And they called the people unto the sacrifices of their gods: and the people did eat, and bowed down to their gods. 3 And Israel joined himself unto Baalpeor: and the anger of the LORD was kindled against Israel. 4 And the LORD said unto Moses, Take all the heads of the people, and hang them up before the LORD against the sun, that the fierce anger of the LORD may be turned away from Israel. 5 And Moses said unto the judges of Israel, Slay ye every one his men that were joined unto Baalpeor. 6 And, behold, one of the children of Israel came and brought unto his brethren a MIDIANITISH woman *in the sight of Moses*, and *in the sight of all the congregation* of the children of Israel, who were weeping before the door of the Tabernacle of the Congregation."

The insult of this man "of Israel", in his bold impudence and disrespect of God's Law, to shamelessly and intentionally affront God Almighty was more than Phinehas, the grandson of Aaron, was willing to endure. His outrage at the disgrace and insolence of a fellow Hebrew against their Most Patient and Compassionate God, burned in his breast and impelled him to immediate judgment.

"7 And when Phinehas, the son of Eleazar, the son of Aaron the priest, saw it, he rose up from among the congregation, and took a javelin in his hand; 8 and he went after the man of Israel into the tent, and thrust both of them through, the man of Israel, and the woman through her belly. So the plague was stayed from the children of Israel. 9 And those that died in the plague were twenty and four thousand. 10 And the LORD spake unto Moses, saying, 11 Phinehas, the son of Eleazar, the son of Aaron the priest, hath turned My wrath away from the children of Israel, while **he was zealous for My sake** among them, that I consumed not the children of Israel in My jealousy. 12 Wherefore say, Behold, **I give unto him My Covenant of Peace**: 13 and he shall have it, and his seed after him, even the Covenant of an everlasting priesthood; **because he was zealous for his God, and made an atonement for the children of Israel.**"

Numbers / Chapter 27

Return to Exodus 5

"12 And the LORD said unto Moses, Get thee up into this Mount Abarim, and see the land which I have given unto the children of Israel. 13 And when thou hast seen it, thou also shalt be gathered unto thy people, as Aaron thy brother was gathered. 14 **For ye rebelled against My Commandment** in the desert of Zin, in the strife of the congregation, to sanctify Me at the water before their eyes: that is the water of Meribah in Kadesh in the wilderness of Zin."

The LORD God demands holiness from His people. "Ye shall be holy unto Me: for I the LORD am Holy, and have severed you from other people, that ye should be Mine" (Leviticus 20:26).

- (Leviticus 19:2) "Ye shall be holy: for I the LORD your God am Holy."

Moses **allowed** the sin of the people to embitter him, causing him to sin. "Looking diligently lest any man

fail of the grace of God; lest any root of bitterness springing up trouble you, and thereby many be defiled" (Hebrews 12:15). There is NO excuse for sin. Yes, Moses was provoked by a "stiffnecked people" (Exodus 32:9), but that's why it was all the more important for him to NOT SIN before them. He was God's representative. Aaron and Moses stood in the place of God before these people. "And he [Aaron] shall be thy [Moses'] spokesman unto the people: and he shall be, even he shall be to thee instead of a mouth, and thou shalt be to him instead of God" (Exodus 4:16). Moses was supposed to justify God's Wisdom in choosing him as their leader. He let God down. Moses did not "sanctify" the LORD before the people when he chose to satisfy his own pride. In this sin, Moses was NOT a meek man-- he did not defend God instead of himself. Yes, it was only *one* sin. But, "whosoever shall keep the whole Law, and yet offend in *one* point, he is guilty of ALL" (James 2:10). A Holy God cannot tolerate even *one* sin. But even more, this *one* sin was committed in front of the whole congregation, therefore the punishment had to be equal to the crime. "Them that sin rebuke before all, that others also may fear" (1Timothy 5:20). Therefore, Moses could not lead his people into the Promised Land, even though God had forgiven him. "32 They angered him also at the waters of strife, so that it went ill with Moses for their sakes: 33 because they provoked his spirit, so that he spake unadvisedly with his lips" (Psalm 106:32-33).

"As much a lieth in you, live peaceably with all men.' --Romans xii. 18. A lady who was somewhat quick-tempered, but was very desirous of becoming a Christian, once said to me, 'Mr. Pelpoe, I assure you there is no fault in my case, because I never lose my temper unless I am provoked!' No, and I do not think the devil does! To lose your temper shows that you are out of communion with your blessed Lord. If the peace of Christ ruled in our hearts, we could never again be provoked. Think of that! Moses was so provoked that he spoke unadvisedly, and yet he was the meekest man that ever lived. But Moses had not the risen Christ to dwell in his heart. Be not discouraged or fear lest you may fall to-morrow. You need only live one moment at a time. Can Christ keep you this minute in a good temper? Then he can keep you the next moment, and the next, and so on forever. He can keep you in peace amid the severest trials, even such as he had to bear-- in loss of friends, in persecution, in death. -- H. W. WEBB-PEPLOE."
--from "For Each New Day"

- (Deuteronomy 17:13) "And all the people shall hear, and fear, and do no more presumptuously."
- (Galatians 2:11) "When Peter was come to Antioch, I withstood him to the face, because he was to be blamed."
- (2Timothy 4:2) "Preach the Word; be instant in season, out of season; reprove, rebuke, exhort with all longsuffering and doctrine."
- (Titus 1:13) "This witness is true. Wherefore rebuke them sharply, that they may be sound in the faith."

"15 And Moses spake unto the LORD, saying, 16 Let the LORD, the God of the spirits of all flesh, set a man over the congregation, 17 which may go out before them, and which may go in before them, and which may lead them out, and which may bring them in; that the congregation of the LORD be not as sheep which have no shepherd.

18 And the LORD said unto Moses, Take thee Joshua the son of Nun, a man in whom is the Spirit, and lay thine hand upon him; 19 and set him before Eleazar the priest, and before all the congregation; and give him a charge in their sight. 20 And thou shalt put some of thine honour upon him, that all the congregation of the children of Israel may be obedient. 21 And he shall stand before Eleazar the priest, who shall ask counsel for him after the judgment of Urim before the LORD: at his word shall they go out, and at his word they shall come in, both he, and all the children of Israel with him, even all the congregation.

22 And Moses did as the LORD commanded him: and he took Joshua, and set him before Eleazar the priest, and before all the congregation: 23 And he laid his hands upon him, and gave him a charge, as the LORD commanded by the hand of Moses.

DEUTERONOMY

Chapter 4

Moses exhorted his people to keep God's "Statutes and Judgments": "6 Keep therefore and do them; for this is your wisdom and your understanding in the sight of the nations, which shall hear all these Statutes, and say, Surely this great nation is a wise and understanding people. 7 For what nation is there so great, **who hath God so nigh unto them, as the LORD our God is in all things that we call upon Him for?** 8 And what nation is there so great, that hath Statutes and Judgments so righteous as all this Law, which I set before you this day? 9 Only take heed to thyself, and keep thy soul diligently, lest thou forget the things which thine eyes have seen, and lest they depart from thy heart all the days of thy life: but teach them thy sons, and thy sons' sons."

(Psalm 121:8) "The LORD shall preserve thy going out and thy coming in from this time forth, and even for evermore."

"10 Specially the day that thou stoodest before the LORD thy God in Horeb, when the LORD said unto me, Gather Me the people together, and I will make them hear My Words, that they may learn to fear Me all the days that they shall live upon the Earth, and that they may teach their children.

11 And ye came near and stood under the mountain; and **the mountain burned with fire** unto the midst of heaven, with darkness, clouds, and thick darkness. 12 And the LORD spake unto you out of the midst of the fire: **ye heard the Voice of the Words**, but saw no similitude; only ye heard a Voice. 13 And He declared unto you His Covenant, which He **commanded you to perform**, even Ten Commandments; and He wrote them upon two tables of stone. 14 And the LORD commanded me at that time to teach you Statutes and Judgments, **that ye might do them** in the land whither ye go over to possess it.

There is no substitution for obedience-- whether in the Old Testament or in the New Testament.

"The core principle of Christianity is what? Faith? No; more than that, deeper yet than that; the core principle of practical Christianity is obedience-- obedience to Jesus Christ. The core principle in the commonwealth is obedience to law; the core principle in every well-regulated family is obedience to parental authority. I am afraid there is not so much of that old filial spirit as there used to be. When a boy has learned the difference between 'you may' and 'you must,' that boy has the first start in genuine manhood. Obedience is the first and the great thing in this school of life in which the Master has placed us. Has not the Master said, 'If ye love me, keep my commandments'? The motto for every Christian should be, 'Find out what Jesus Christ wants you to do, and then *do* it.' -- THEODORE L. CUYLER." --from "For Each New Day"

"15 Take ye therefore good heed unto yourselves; for ye saw no manner of similitude on the day that the LORD spake unto you in Horeb out of the midst of the fire: 16 lest ye corrupt yourselves, and make you a graven image, the similitude of any figure, the likeness of male or female, [for the purpose of worship] 17 the likeness of any beast that is on the Earth, the likeness of any winged fowl that flieth in the air, 18 the likeness of any thing that creepeth on the ground, the likeness of any fish that is in the waters beneath the Earth: 19 and lest thou lift up thine eyes unto heaven, and when thou seest the sun, and the moon, and the stars, even all the host of heaven, shouldest be driven to **worship them**, and **serve them**, which the LORD

thy God hath divided unto all nations under the whole heaven. 20 But the LORD hath taken you, and brought you forth out of the iron furnace, even out of Egypt, to be unto Him a people of inheritance, as ye are this day."

A quote from D. L. Moody:

"We might go off to other ages or other lands and find people who make images and bow down to them; but we have none here. Let us see if this is true. Let us step into the scales and see if we can turn them when weighed against this commandment.

I believe this is where the battle is fought. Satan tries to keep us from worshiping God aright, and from making Him first in everything. If I let some image made by man get into my heart and take the place of God the Creator, it is a Sin. I believe that Satan is willing to have us worship anything, however sacred- the Bible, the crucifix, the church- if only we do not worship God Himself.

You cannot find a place in the Bible where a man has been allowed to bow down and worship anyone but the God of heaven and Jesus Christ His Son. In the book of Revelation when an angel came down to John, he was about to fall down and worship him, but the angel would not let him. If an angel from heaven is not to be worshiped, when you find people bowing down to pictures, to images, even when they bow down to worship the cross, it is a sin. There are a great many who seem to be carried away with these things." --from "The Ten Commandments" --

<http://WhatSaithTheScripture.com/Voice/Moody.Ten.Commandments.html> -- by D. L. Moody --

<http://WhatSaithTheScripture.com/Fellowship/D.L.Moody.html> --

"21 Furthermore the LORD was angry with me for your sakes, and swore that I should NOT go over Jordan, and that I should NOT go in unto that good land, which the LORD thy God giveth thee for an inheritance: 22 but I must DIE IN THIS land, I must not go over Jordan: but ye shall go over, and possess that good land." [Read more on the issue concerning Moses' punishment and death in Deuteronomy 32 and especially in chapter 34.]

"23 Take heed unto yourselves, lest ye forget the Covenant of the LORD your God, which He made with you, and make you a graven image, or the likeness of any thing, which the LORD thy God hath forbidden thee. 24 For the LORD thy God is a Consuming Fire, even a Jealous God. 25 When thou shalt beget children, and children's children, and ye shall have remained long in the land, and shall corrupt yourselves, and make a graven image, or the likeness of any thing, and shall do evil in the sight of the LORD thy God, to provoke Him to anger: 26 I call Heaven and Earth to witness against you this day, that ye shall soon utterly perish from off the land whereunto ye go over Jordan to possess it; ye shall NOT prolong your days upon it, but shall utterly be destroyed. 27 And the LORD shall **scatter you among the nations**, and ye shall be left few in number among the heathen, whither the LORD shall lead you. 28 And there **ye shall SERVE gods, the work of men's hands, wood and stone, which neither see, nor hear, nor eat, nor smell.**"

The LORD warned His people that if they FELL out of love with Him, that the sin of worshipping idols would be their downfall. And God does give to "every man according as he purposeth in his heart" (2Corinthians 9:7).

- (Ezekiel 36:19) "And I scattered them among the heathen, and they were dispersed through the countries: **according to their way and according to their doings** I judged them."
- (Jeremiah 21:14) "But I will punish you **according to the fruit of your doings**, saith the LORD."
- (Hosea 12:2) "The LORD hath also a controversy with Judah, and will punish Jacob **according to his**

ways; according to his doings will He recompense him."

- (Zechariah 1:6) "But My Words and My Statutes, which I commanded My servants the prophets, did they not take hold of your fathers? and they returned and said, Like as the LORD of hosts thought to do unto us, **according to our ways, and according to our doings**, so hath He dealt with us."
- (Jeremiah 32:19) "Great in Counsel, and Mighty in work: for Thine eyes are open upon all the ways of the sons of men: to give every one **according to his ways, and according to the fruit of his doings.**"

"29 But if from thence thou shalt seek the LORD thy God, thou shalt find Him, **if thou seek Him with ALL thy heart and with ALL thy soul.**"

- (Matthew 22:37) "Love the LORD thy God with ALL thy heart, and with ALL thy soul, and with ALL thy mind."

"30 When thou art in Tribulation, and all these things are come upon thee, **even in the Latter Days**, if thou turn to the LORD thy God, and shalt be obedient unto His Voice; 31 (For the LORD thy God is a Merciful God;) He will not forsake thee, neither destroy thee, nor forget the Covenant of thy fathers which He swore unto them.

32 For ask now of the days that are past, which were before thee, since the day that God created man upon the Earth, and **ask from the one side of Heaven unto the other**, whether there hath been any such thing as this great thing is, or hath been heard like it? 33 **Did ever people hear the Voice of God speaking out of the midst of the fire, as thou hast heard, and live?** 34 **Or hath God assayed to go and take Him a nation from the midst of another nation, by temptations, by Signs, and by Wonders, and by war, and by a Mighty Hand, and by a Stretched Out Arm, and by great terrors, according to all that the LORD your God did for you in Egypt before your eyes?** 35 Unto thee it was showed, that thou mightest **KNOW THAT THE LORD HE IS GOD; THERE IS NONE ELSE BESIDE HIM.** 36 Out of heaven He made thee to **hear His Voice**, that He might **instruct** thee: and upon Earth He **showed** thee His Great Fire; and thou **heardest His Words** out of the midst of the fire.

37 And **because He LOVED thy fathers**, therefore **He CHOSE their seed after them**, and brought thee out in His sight with His Mighty Power out of Egypt; 38 to drive out nations from before thee greater and mightier than thou art, to bring thee in, to give thee their land for an inheritance, as it is this day.

39 Know therefore this day, and consider it in thine heart, that the

LORD HE IS GOD IN HEAVEN ABOVE,
AND UPON THE EARTH BENEATH:
THERE IS NONE ELSE.

40 Thou shalt keep **THEREFORE** His Statutes, and His Commandments, which I command thee this day, that it may go well with thee, and with thy children after thee, and that thou mayest prolong thy days upon the Earth, which the LORD thy God giveth thee, for ever...

44 And this is the Law which Moses set before the children of Israel: 45 these are the Testimonies, and the Statutes, and the Judgments, which Moses spake unto the children of Israel, after they came forth out of Egypt.

Deuteronomy / Chapter 5

And Moses called all Israel, and said unto them, Hear, O Israel, the Statutes and Judgments which I speak in your ears this day, that ye may learn them, and keep, and do them. 2 The LORD our God made a Covenant with us in Horeb. 3 The LORD made not this Covenant with our fathers, but with us, even us, who are all of us here alive this day. 4 The LORD talked with you face to face in the mount out of the midst of the fire, 5 (I stood between the LORD and you at that time, to show you the Word of the LORD: for ye were afraid by reason of the fire, and went not up into the mount;) saying,

6 I Am the LORD thy God, which brought thee out of the land of Egypt, from the house of bondage. 7 Thou shalt have none other gods before Me."

Moses again read the Ten Commandments to the people of Israel.

"22 These Words the LORD spake unto all your assembly in the mount out of the midst of the fire, of the cloud, and of the thick darkness, **with a Great Voice**: and He added no more. And He wrote them in two tables of stone, and delivered them unto me... 32 Ye shall observe to do therefore as the LORD your God hath commanded you: ye shall not turn aside to the right hand or to the left. 33 Ye shall walk in all the Ways which the LORD your God hath commanded you,

that ye may **live**, and

that it may be **well** with you, and

that ye may **prolong** your days in the land which ye shall possess."

Blessings come as the fruit of obedience. "This thing commanded I them, saying, **Obey My Voice**, and I will be your God, and ye shall be My people: and walk ye in all the Ways that I have commanded you, that it may be well unto you" (Jeremiah 7:23). A loving God commands only what is in your best interest. His Ways prosper His purposes, Heavens purposes, and your purposes. But it takes agreement to have the same purposes. "Can two walk together, except they be agreed?" (Amos 3:3). Heaven is Paradise because God resides there and all in residence there agree with Him. They are blessed because their freewill chooses to obey what God says is best for them. "As for God, His Way is Perfect; the Word of the LORD is Tried: He is a Buckler to all them that trust in Him" (2Samuel 22:31). And blessings follow obedience when we seek that His "Will be done in Earth, as it is in Heaven" (Matthew 6:10).

The Ten Commandments, when carefully considered, all relate either to man's treatment of God or to his treatment of his fellow man. This is why the LORD Jesus said, "37 Thou shalt love the LORD thy God with ALL thy heart, and with ALL thy soul, and with ALL thy mind. 38 This is the First and Great Commandment. 39 And the Second is like unto it, Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself. 40 On these Two Commandments hang ALL the Law and the prophets" (Matthew 22:37-40).

- (John 13:34) "A New Commandment I give unto you, That ye **love one another; as I have loved you**, that ye also love one another."
- (James 2:8) "If ye fulfil the Royal Law according to the Scripture, Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself, ye do well."
- (Matthew 7:12) "Therefore all things whatsoever ye would that men should do to you, do ye even so to them: for this is the Law and the prophets."
- (Galatians 6:2) "Bear ye one another's burdens, and so fulfil the Law of Christ."

- (Romans 13:8,10) "Owe no man any thing, but to love one another: for he that loveth another hath fulfilled the Law...Love worketh no ill to his neighbour: therefore Love is the fulfilling of the Law."

Deuteronomy / Chapter 6

Now these are the Commandments, the Statutes, and the Judgments, which the LORD your God commanded to teach you, that ye might do them in the land whither ye go to possess it: 2 that thou mightest fear the LORD thy God, to keep all His Statutes and His Commandments, which I command thee, thou, and thy son, and thy son's son, all the days of thy life; and that thy days may be prolonged. 3 Hear therefore, O Israel, and observe to do it; that it may be well with thee, and that ye may increase mightily, as the LORD God of thy fathers hath promised thee, in the land that floweth with milk and honey.

4 Hear, O Israel: The LORD our God is One LORD: 5 and thou shalt love the LORD thy God with ALL thine heart, and with ALL thy soul, and with ALL thy might. 6 And these Words, which I command thee this day, shall be in thine heart: 7 and **thou shalt teach them diligently unto thy children**, and shalt talk of them when thou sittest in thine house, and when thou walkest by the way, and when thou liest down, and when thou risest up... 10 And it shall be, when the LORD thy God shall have brought thee into the land which He sware unto thy fathers, to Abraham, to Isaac, and to Jacob, to give thee great and goodly cities, which thou buildedst not, 11 and houses full of all good things, which thou filledst not, and wells digged, which thou diggedst not, vineyards and olive trees, which thou plantedst not; *when thou shalt have eaten and be full*; 12 *then BEWARE lest thou forget the LORD*, which brought thee forth out of the land of Egypt, from the house of bondage. 13 Thou shalt fear the LORD thy God, and serve Him, and shalt swear by His Name. 14 Ye shall not go after other gods, of the gods of the people which are round about you; 15 (For the LORD thy God is a Jealous God among you) lest the anger of the LORD thy God be kindled against thee, and destroy thee from off the face of the Earth.

Deuteronomy / Chapter 31

And the LORD said unto Moses, **Behold, thy days approach that thou must die**: call Joshua, and present yourselves in the Tabernacle of the Congregation, that I may give him a charge. And Moses and Joshua went, and presented themselves in the Tabernacle of the Congregation. 15 And the LORD appeared in the Tabernacle in a pillar of a cloud: and the pillar of the cloud stood over the door of the Tabernacle. 16 And the LORD said unto Moses, **Behold, thou shalt sleep with thy fathers**; and this people will rise up, and go a whoring after the gods of the strangers of the land, whither they go to be among them, and will forsake Me, and break My Covenant which I have made with them. 17 Then My anger shall be kindled against them in that day, and I will forsake them, and I will hide My face from them, and they shall be devoured, and many evils and troubles shall befall them; so that they will say in that day, Are not these evils come upon us, because our God is not among us? 18 And I will surely hide My face in that day for all the evils which they shall have wrought, in that they are turned unto other gods. 19 **Now therefore write ye this Song for you, and teach it the children of Israel**: put it in their mouths, **that this Song may be a witness for Me against the children of Israel**. 20 For when I shall have brought them into the land which I sware unto their fathers, that floweth with milk and honey; and they shall have eaten and filled themselves, and waxen fat; then will they turn unto other gods, and serve them, and provoke Me, and break My Covenant. 21 And it shall come to pass, when many evils and troubles are befallen them, that **this Song shall testify against them as a witness**; for it shall not be forgotten out of the mouths of their seed: for I know their imagination which they go about, even now, before I have brought them into the land which I sware. 22 **Moses therefore wrote this Song the same day, and taught it the children of Israel.**"

The LORD's wrath...

"23 And He gave Joshua the son of Nun a charge, and said, Be strong and of a good courage: for thou shalt

bring the children of Israel into the land which I swore unto them: and I will be with thee. 24 And it came to pass, when Moses had made an end of writing the Words of this Law in a Book, until they were finished, 25 that Moses commanded the Levites, which bare the Ark of the Covenant of the LORD, saying, 26 Take this Book of the Law, and put it in the side of the Ark of the Covenant of the LORD your God, that it may be there for a witness against thee. 27 For I know thy rebellion, and thy stiff neck: behold, **while I am yet alive with you this day, ye have been rebellious against the LORD; and how much more after my death?...** 30 And Moses spake in the ears of all the congregation of Israel the Words of this Song."

Deuteronomy / Chapter 32

Give ear, O ye heavens, and I will speak; and hear, O Earth, the words of my mouth. 2 My doctrine shall drop as the rain, my speech shall distil as the dew, as the small rain upon the tender herb, and as the showers upon the grass: 3 because I will publish the Name of the LORD: ascribe ye greatness unto our God. 4 He is the Rock, His work is perfect: for all His ways are Judgment: **a God of Truth and without iniquity**, Just and Right is He. 5 They have corrupted themselves, their spot is not the spot of His children: they are a perverse and crooked generation. 6 Do ye thus requite the LORD, O foolish people and unwise? is not He thy Father that hath bought thee? hath He not made thee, and established thee?"

But they forgot all the wondrous things that God had done for them. They forgot God. And iniquity always reaps punishment.

- (Job 8:13) "So are the paths of all that forget God; and the hypocrite's hope shall perish."
- (Psalm 9:17) "The wicked shall be turned into hell, and all the nations that forget God."
- (Psalm 50:22) "Now consider this, ye that forget God, lest I tear you in pieces, and there be none to deliver."

Sinning hearts cannot sin unless they first forget God. "**If ye love Me, keep My Commandments**" (John 14:15). "Remember therefore from whence thou art fallen, and repent, and do the first works; or else I will come unto thee quickly, and will remove thy candlestick out of his place, except thou repent" (Revelation 2:5). Beware, beloved, Laodicea is the age where "iniquity shall abound, [and] the love of many shall wax cold" (Matthew 24:12).

"16 They provoked Him to jealousy with strange gods, with abominations provoked they Him to anger. 17 They sacrificed unto devils, not to God; to gods whom they knew not, to new gods that came newly up, whom your fathers feared not. 18 Of the Rock that begat thee thou art unmindful, and hast **forgotten God that formed thee.**"

In treasuring the Word, Moses had tried his best to keep the children of Israel from wandering away from the LORD. But, even at the end of his life, he received the sad report concerning them from the very mouth of God.

"19 And when the LORD saw it, He abhorred them, because of the provoking of His sons, and of His daughters. 20 And He said, I will hide My face from them, I will see what their end shall be: for they are a very froward generation, children in whom is NO FAITH. 21 They have moved Me to jealousy with that which is not God; they have provoked Me to anger with their vanities: and I will move them to jealousy with those which are not a people; I will provoke them to anger with a foolish nation. 22 For a fire is kindled in Mine anger, and shall **burn unto the lowest hell**, and shall consume the Earth with her increase, and set on fire the foundations of the mountains."

Truly, to turn our back on God, after having KNOWN Him, is the greatest sin of all. "29 Of how much sorer punishment, suppose ye, shall he be thought worthy, who hath trodden under foot the Son of God, and hath counted the blood of the covenant, wherewith he was sanctified, an unholy thing, and hath done despite unto the Spirit of grace? 30 For we KNOW Him that hath said, Vengeance belongeth unto Me, I will recompense, saith the LORD. And again, The LORD shall judge His people. 31 It is a fearful thing to fall into the hands of the Living God" (Hebrews 10:29-31). How fearful? You cannot have a stronger enemy than the Almighty! You do NOT want to tempt Omnipotence! "For if after they have escaped the pollutions of the world through the Knowledge of the LORD and Saviour Jesus Christ, they are again entangled therein, **and overcome**, the latter end is worse with them than the beginning" (2Peter 2:20).

- (Psalm 50:22) "Now consider this, ye that forget God, lest I tear you in pieces, and there be none to deliver."
- (Hosea 4:6) "My people are destroyed for lack of Knowledge: because thou hast rejected Knowledge, I will also reject thee... seeing thou hast forgotten the Law of thy God, I will also forget Thy children."

"23 I will heap mischiefs upon them; I will spend mine arrows upon them. 24 They shall be burnt with hunger, and devoured with burning heat, and with bitter destruction: I will also send the teeth of beasts upon them, with the poison of serpents of the dust. 25 The sword without, and terror within, shall destroy both the young man and the virgin, the suckling also with the man of gray hairs... 28 For they are a nation void of counsel, neither is there any understanding in them. 29 *O that they were wise, that they understood this, that they would consider their latter end!* 30 How should one chase a thousand, and two put ten thousand to flight, except their Rock had sold them, and the LORD had shut them up? 31 For their rock is not as our Rock, even our enemies themselves being judges. 32 For their vine is of the vine of Sodom, and of the fields of Gomorrah: their grapes are grapes of gall, their clusters are bitter: 33 Their wine is the poison of dragons, and the cruel venom of asps. 34 Is not this laid up in store with Me, and sealed up among My Treasures? 35 **To Me belongeth vengeance, and recompense; their foot shall slide in due time:** for the day of their calamity is at hand, and the things that shall come upon them **make haste.**"

These Warnings are as applicable today as they were when they were given. The sins are the same, only more grievous "Evil men and seducers shall wax **worse and worse**, deceiving, and being deceived" (2Timothy 3:13). And the Judgment will be appropriate to the crime.

"36 For the LORD shall judge His people... 39 See now that I, even I, am He, and there is no god with Me: I kill, and I make alive; I wound, and I heal: neither is there any that can deliver out of My hand... 41 If I whet My Glittering Sword, and Mine hand take hold on Judgment; I will render vengeance to Mine enemies, and will reward them that hate Me. 42 I will make Mine arrows drunk with blood, and My Sword shall devour flesh; and that with the blood of the slain and of the captives, from the beginning of revenges upon the enemy."

Return to Deuteronomy 4.

Moses is commanded by the Almighty to go to the place where he shall soon die.

"48 And the LORD spake unto Moses that selfsame day, saying, 49 Get thee up into this mountain Abarim, unto Mount Nebo, which is in the land of Moab, that is over against Jericho; and behold the land of Canaan, which I give unto the children of Israel for a possession: 50 **and die in the mount whither thou goest up, and be gathered unto thy people;** as Aaron thy brother died in Mount Hor, and was gathered unto his people: 51 **because ye trespassed against Me** among the children of Israel at the waters of Meribah-Kadesh, in the wilderness of Zin; **because ye sanctified Me not in the midst of the children of Israel.** 52 **Yet thou shalt see the land before thee; but thou shalt not go thither unto the land** which I give the children of Israel."

As we said earlier, in Numbers 20, Moses disobeyed the LORD when God told him to speak to the rock, and instead he hit the rock, and not just once, but twice. It would have been more glorifying and justifying to God, and would have had a more **sanctifying** effect on the people, if Moses had obeyed the LORD and brought forth the water from the rock by merely SPEAKING the words. If God had wanted His servant to strike the rock, He would have told him so. But the children of Israel had provoked Moses to wrath and disobedience.

Deuteronomy / Chapter 33

And this is the blessing, wherewith Moses the man of God blessed the children of Israel before his death.

2 And he said, The LORD came from Sinai, and rose up from Seir unto them; He shined forth from Mount Paran, and He came with ten thousands of saints: from His right hand went a fiery Law for them... 3 Yea, He loved the people... 26 There is none like unto the God of Jeshurun, Who rideth upon the heaven in thy help, and in His excellency on the sky. 27 The Eternal God is thy Refuge, and underneath are the Everlasting Arms: and He shall thrust out the enemy from before thee; and shall say, Destroy them. 28 Israel then shall dwell in safety alone: the fountain of Jacob shall be upon a land of corn and wine; also His heavens shall drop down dew. 29 Happy art thou, O Israel: who is like unto thee, O people **saved by the LORD**, the Shield of thy help, and Who is the Sword of thy excellency! and thine enemies shall be found liars unto thee; and thou shalt tread upon their high places.

- (Isaiah 54:17) "No weapon that is formed against thee shall prosper; and every tongue that shall rise against thee in judgment thou shalt condemn. This is the **heritage** of the servants [i.e., ones who serve] of the LORD, and their righteousness is of Me, saith the LORD."

Return to Deuteronomy 4.

Deuteronomy / Chapter 34

The Death of Moses

And Moses went up from the plains of Moab unto the mountain of Nebo, to the top of Pisgah, that is over against Jericho. And the LORD showed him all the land of Gilead, unto Dan, 2 and all Naphtali, and the land of Ephraim, and Manasseh, and all the land of Judah, unto the utmost sea, 3 and the south, and the plain of the valley of Jericho, the city of palm trees, unto Zoar.

4 And the LORD said unto him, This is the land which I swear unto Abraham, unto Isaac, and unto Jacob, saying, I will give it unto thy seed: **I have caused thee to see it with thine eyes, but thou shalt not go over thither.**

5 So **Moses the servant of the LORD died there in the land of Moab, according to the Word of the LORD.** 6 And He [the LORD] buried him in a valley in the land of Moab, over against Bethpeor: but **no man knoweth of his sepulchre unto this day.**

7 And Moses was an hundred and twenty years old when he died: his eye was not dim, nor his natural force abated.

8 And the children of Israel wept for Moses in the plains of Moab thirty days: so the days of weeping and mourning for Moses were ended."

The LORD God loved His servant, Moses. All the host of Israel knew that God favoured Moses with special privileges, which of course was only Just and Fair on God's part. After all, Scripture is very clear on this

point, that if you "draw nigh to God, and He will draw nigh to you" (James 4:8). The Almighty says to *anyone*, "them that honour Me I will honour" (1Samuel 2:30). And because of this intimacy with His servant, for the servant's sake, for the people's sake, and most of all because of His Own Just Character, God had to judge Moses! "Them that sin rebuke before all, that others also may fear" (1Timothy 5:20). It was NOT overly harsh of the LORD to have been so severe with Moses, for the LORD is ALWAYS Just in His dealings with men. "**Sing the song of Moses the servant of God**, and the Song of the Lamb, saying,

Great and marvellous are Thy works, LORD God Almighty; **Just and True are thy Ways**, thou King of saints"

(Revelation 15:3).

And the LORD promises to us, in His Word, that, "If any man serve Me, let him follow Me; and **where I am, there shall also My servant be**: if any man serve Me, him will My Father honour" (John 12:26). Let us heed these Words if we wish to "follow" the LORD to Where He is, for the time of the LORD's Return is nigh at hand, "and every man that hath this hope **in Him** purifieth himself, even as He is Pure" (1John 3:3). [Please read, "The Character of God Is Revealed in the Rapture" -- <http://WhatSaithTheScripture.com/Timeline/Character.of.God.in.Raptur.html> --.]

"9 And Joshua the son of Nun was full of the Spirit Of Wisdom; for Moses had laid his hands upon him: and the children of Israel hearkened unto him, and did as the LORD commanded Moses.

10 And there arose not a prophet since in Israel like unto Moses, whom the LORD knew face to face, 11 in all the Signs and the Wonders, which the LORD sent him to do in the land of Egypt to Pharaoh, and to all his servants, and to all his land, 12 and in all that mighty hand, and in all the great terror which Moses showed in the sight of all Israel."

As in his life, even so was Moses in his death, a servant of his God. "So **Moses the servant of the LORD** died there in the land of Moab, according to the Word of the LORD" (34:5). And the LORD emphasizes His emotions regarding His dear servant. "There arose not a prophet since in Israel like unto Moses, whom the LORD knew face to face" (34:10).

Addendum: The Record of Israel's Continual Backslidings / Psalm 106

"7 Our fathers understood not Thy Wonders in Egypt; they remembered not the multitude of Thy mercies; but provoked Him at the sea, even at the Red Sea. 8 Nevertheless He saved them for His Name's sake, **that He might make His mighty power to be known**. 9 He rebuked the Red Sea also, and it was dried up: so He led them through the depths, as through the wilderness. 10 And He saved them from the hand of him that hated them, and redeemed them from the hand of the enemy. 11 And the waters covered their enemies: **there was not one of them left**. 12 **THEN believed they His Words**; they sang His praise. 13 **They soon forgot His works**; they waited NOT for His Counsel: 14 but lusted exceedingly in the wilderness, and **tempted God** in the desert. 15 And He gave them their request; but sent leanness into their soul. 16 **They envied Moses** also in the camp, and Aaron the saint of the LORD. 17 The Earth opened and swallowed up Dathan, and covered the company of Abiram. 18 And a fire was kindled in their company; the flame burned up the wicked. 19 They made a calf in Horeb, and **worshipped the molten image**. 20 Thus they changed their glory into the similitude of an ox that eateth grass. 21 **They forgot God their Saviour**, which had done great things in Egypt; 22 wondrous works in the land of Ham, and terrible things by the Red Sea. 23 Therefore He said that He would destroy them, had not **Moses His chosen** stood before Him in the breach, to turn away His wrath, lest He should destroy them. 24 Yea, **they despised the pleasant land, they believed not His Word**: 25 but **murmured** in their tents, and hearkened NOT unto the Voice of the LORD. 26 Therefore He lifted up His hand against them, to overthrow them in the wilderness: 27 to

overthrow their seed also among the nations, and to scatter them in the lands. 28 **They joined themselves also unto Baalpeor**, and ate the sacrifices of the dead. 29 Thus they provoked Him to anger with their inventions: and the plague brake in upon them. 30 Then stood up Phinehas, and executed judgment: and so the plague was stayed. 31 And that was counted unto him for righteousness unto all generations for evermore. 32 **They angered Him also at the waters of strife, so that it went ill with Moses for their sakes**: 33 because they provoked his spirit, so that he spake unadvisedly with his lips. 34 They did not destroy the nations, concerning whom the LORD commanded them: 35 but **were mingled among the heathen**, and learned their works. 36 And **they served their idols**: which were a snare unto them. 37 Yea, **they sacrificed their sons and their daughters unto devils**, 38 **and shed innocent blood, even the blood of their sons and of their daughters, whom they sacrificed unto the idols of Canaan**: and the land was polluted with blood. 39 Thus were they **defiled with their own works**, and **went a whoring with their own inventions**. 40 Therefore was the wrath of the LORD kindled against His people, insomuch that He abhorred His own inheritance. 41 And He gave them into the hand of the heathen; and they that hated them ruled over them. 42 Their enemies also oppressed them, and they were brought into subjection under their hand. 43 **Many times did He deliver them; but they provoked Him with their counsel**, and were brought low for their iniquity. 44 Nevertheless He regarded their affliction, when He heard their cry: 45 And He remembered for them His Covenant, and repented according to the multitude of His mercies. 46 He made them also to be pitied of all those that carried them captives. 47 Save us, O LORD our God, and gather us from among the heathen, to give thanks unto Thy holy Name, and to triumph in Thy praise. 48 Blessed be the LORD God of Israel from everlasting to everlasting: and let all the people say, Amen. Praise ye the LORD."

- o "2:18 And when the LORD raised them up judges, then the LORD was with the judge, and delivered them out of the hand of their enemies all the days of the judge: for it repented the LORD because of their groanings by reason of them that oppressed them and vexed them... 6:9 And I delivered you out of the hand of the Egyptians, and out of the hand of all that oppressed you, and drave them out from before you, and gave you their land... 8:34 *And the children of Israel remembered NOT the LORD their God, Who had delivered them out of the hands of ALL their enemies on every side*" (Judges 2:18, 6:9, 8:34).

Beyond the Pentateuch, the Scripture has many reminders for us that Moses' calling in life was to serve God.

JOSHUA

(Joshua 1) "1 Now after the death of **Moses the servant of the LORD** it came to pass, that the LORD spake unto Joshua the son of Nun, Moses' minister, saying,

2 **Moses My servant** is dead; now therefore arise, go over this Jordan, thou, and all this people, unto the land which I do give to them, even to the children of Israel. 3 Every place that the sole of your foot shall tread upon, that have I given unto you, as I said unto Moses. 4 From the wilderness and this Lebanon even unto the great river, the river Euphrates, all the land of the Hittites, and unto the great sea toward the going down of the sun, shall be your coast. 5 There shall not any man be able to stand before thee all the days of thy life: as I was with Moses, so I will be with thee: I will not fail thee, nor forsake thee. 6 Be strong and of a good courage: for unto this people shalt thou divide for an inheritance the land, which I swore unto their fathers to give them.

7 Only be thou strong and very courageous, that thou mayest observe to do according to all the Law, which **Moses My servant** commanded thee: turn not from it to the right hand or to the left, that thou mayest prosper whithersoever thou goest. 8 This Book of the Law shall not depart out of thy mouth; but thou shalt meditate therein day and night, that thou mayest **observe to do according to ALL that is written therein**: for then thou shalt make thy way prosperous, and then thou shalt have good success.

9 Have not I commanded thee? Be strong and of a good courage; be not afraid, neither be thou dismayed: for the LORD thy God is with thee whithersoever thou goest...

13 Remember the Word which **Moses the servant of the LORD** commanded you, saying, The LORD your God hath given you rest, and hath given you this land. 14 Your wives, your little ones, and your cattle, shall remain in the land which Moses gave you on this side Jordan; but ye shall pass before your brethren armed, all the mighty men of valour, and help them; 15 until the LORD have given your brethren rest, as He hath given you, and they also have possessed the land which the LORD your God giveth them: then ye shall return unto the land of your possession, and enjoy it, which **Moses the LORD'S servant** gave you on this side Jordan toward the sunrising.

16 And they answered Joshua, saying, All that thou commandest us we will do, and whithersoever thou sendest us, we will go. 17 According as we hearkened unto Moses in all things, so will we hearken unto thee: only the LORD thy God be with thee, as He was with Moses.

"But take diligent heed to do the Commandment and the Law, which **Moses the servant of the LORD** charged you, to love the LORD your God, and to walk in ALL His Ways, and to keep His Commandments, and to cleave unto Him, and to serve Him with all your heart and with all your soul."

(Joshua 22:5)

CHRONICLES

(1Chronicles 6:49) "But Aaron and his sons offered upon the altar of the burnt offering, and on the altar of incense, and were appointed for all the work of the place most holy, and to make an atonement for Israel, according to all that **Moses the servant of God** had commanded."

(2Chronicles 24:6) "And the king called for Jehoiada the chief, and said unto him, Why hast thou not required of the Levites to bring in out of Judah and out of Jerusalem the collection, according to the Commandment of **Moses the servant of the LORD**, and of the congregation of Israel, for the Tabernacle of witness?"

NEHEMIAH

Another Recounting of Israel's Deliverance from Egypt

(Nehemiah. 9:6-21,23) "6 Thou, even Thou, art LORD alone; Thou hast made heaven, the Heaven of heavens, with all their host, the Earth, and all things that are therein, the seas, and all that is therein, and Thou preservest them all; and the host of Heaven worshippeth Thee.

7 Thou art the LORD the God, Who didst choose Abram, and broughtest him forth out of Ur of the Chaldees, and gavest him the name of Abraham; 8 and foundest his heart faithful before Thee, and madest a Covenant with him to give the land of the Canaanites, the Hittites, the Amorites, and the Perizzites, and the Jebusites, and the Girgashites, to give it, I say, to his seed, **and hast performed Thy Words; for Thou art**

Righteous: 9 and didst see the affliction of our fathers in Egypt, and heardest their cry by the Red Sea; 10 and showedst Signs and Wonders upon Pharaoh, and on all his servants, and on all the people of his land: for Thou knewest that they dealt proudly against them. So didst Thou get Thee a Name, as it is this day.

11 And Thou didst divide the sea before them, so that they went through the midst of the sea on the dry land; and their persecutors Thou threwest into the deeps, as a stone into the mighty waters. 12 Moreover Thou leddest them in the day by a cloudy pillar; and in the night by a pillar of fire, to give them **light in the way wherein they should go.**

13 Thou camest down also upon Mount Sinai, and spakest with them from Heaven, and gavest them **Right Judgments, and True Laws, Good Statutes and Commandments:** 14 and madest known unto them Thy Holy Sabbath, and commandedst them Precepts, Statutes, and Laws, by the hand of **Moses Thy servant.** 15 And gavest them bread from heaven for their hunger, and broughtest forth water for them out of the rock for their thirst, and promisedst them that they should go in to possess the land which Thou hadst sworn to give them.

16 But they and our fathers dealt proudly, and hardened their necks, and hearkened not to Thy Commandments, 17 and refused to obey, neither were mindful of Thy Wonders that Thou didst among them; but hardened their necks, and in their rebellion appointed a captain to return to their bondage: but Thou art a God ready to pardon, gracious and merciful, slow to anger, and of great kindness, and forsookest them not. 18 Yea, when they had made them a molten calf, and said, This is thy God that brought thee up out of Egypt, and had wrought great provocations; 19 yet Thou in Thy Manifold Mercies forsookest them not in the wilderness: the pillar of the cloud departed not from them by day, to lead them in the way; neither the pillar of fire by night, to show them light, and the way wherein they should go.

20 Thou gavest also **Thy Good Spirit to instruct them,** and withheldst not Thy manna from their mouth, and gavest them water for their thirst. 21 Yea, forty years didst Thou sustain them in the wilderness, so that they lacked nothing; their clothes waxed not old, and their feet swelled not... 23 Their children also multipliedst Thou as the stars of heaven, and broughtest them into the land, concerning which Thou hadst promised to their fathers, that they should go in to possess it.

DANIEL

Daniel served the LORD similarly as did Moses. He praised the operation of His Maker's hands in benefitting His human creations. "I thought it good to show the Signs and Wonders that The High God hath wrought toward me. How great are His Signs! and how mighty are His Wonders! His Kingdom is an Everlasting Kingdom, and His Dominion is from generation to generation" (Daniel 4:2-3). Daniel also had the testimony of being called God's servant. "And the king spake and said to Daniel, O Daniel, **servant of the Living God,** is thy God, Whom thou servest continually, able to deliver thee from the lions?" (Daniel 6:20).

(Daniel 9:11) "Yea, all Israel have transgressed Thy Law, even by departing, that they might not obey Thy Voice; therefore the Curse is poured upon us, and the Oath that is written in the Law of **Moses the servant of God,** because we have sinned against Him."

- (Hosea 14:9) "Who is wise, and he shall understand these things? prudent, and he shall know them? for the Ways of the LORD are right, and the just shall walk in them: but the transgressors shall fall therein."
- (Zephaniah 3:5) "The just LORD is in the midst thereof; He will not do iniquity: every morning doth He bring His Judgment to light, He faileth not; but the unjust knoweth no shame."

- (Micah 7:20) "Thou wilt perform the Truth to Jacob, and the mercy to Abraham, which Thou hast sworn unto our fathers from the days of old."

JOHN

Moses gave us the Law and Jesus fulfilled it.

(John 1:14,17) "14 And the Word [Jesus] was made flesh, and dwelt among us, (and we beheld His Glory, the Glory as of the Only Begotten of the Father,) full of Grace and Truth... 17 For the Law was given by Moses, but Grace and Truth came by Jesus Christ."

The LORD Jesus and His servant, Moses, gave testimony to all of mankind that the Father gave us His Truth. "I [Jesus] have given them Thy [the Father's] Word; and the world hath hated them, because they are not of the world, even as I am not of the world" (John 17:14). Moses endured suffering to give God's people the Law. Jesus Christ not only fulfilled the Law, but died doing so. "Did not Moses give you the Law, and yet none of you keepeth the Law? Why go ye about to kill Me [Jesus]?" (John 7:19). Moses came to "bear witness" of "the Truth". "To this end was I [Jesus] born, and **for this cause came I into the world, that I should bear witness unto the Truth**. Every one that is of the Truth heareth My Voice" (John 18:37). **Jesus Christ is "The Truth"**. "Jesus saith unto him, I am The Way, The Truth, and The Life: no man cometh unto the Father, but by Me" (John 14:6).

Moses led God's people to freedom. Jesus is Freedom to God's people.
 "And ye shall know the Truth [Jesus], and the Truth shall make you Free"
 (John 8:32).

HEBREWS

(Hebrews 3:5) "And **Moses verily was faithful in all his house, as a servant**, for a Testimony of those things which were to be spoken after."

(Hebrews 11:23-29) "23 By FAITH Moses, when he was born, was hid three months of his parents, because they saw he was a proper child; and they were not afraid of the king's commandment. 24 By FAITH Moses, when he was come to years, refused to be called the son of Pharaoh's daughter; 25 choosing rather to suffer affliction with the people of God, than to enjoy the pleasures of sin for a season; 26 esteeming the reproach of Christ greater riches than the treasures in Egypt: for he had respect unto the recompense of the reward. 27 By FAITH he forsook Egypt, not fearing the wrath of the king: for he endured, as seeing Him Who is Invisible. 28 Through FAITH he kept the Passover, and the sprinkling of blood, lest He that destroyed the firstborn should touch them. 29 By FAITH they passed through the Red Sea as by dry land: which the Egyptians assaying to do were drowned."

REVELATION

The last written Testimony from God to His people.

(Revelation 1:1-3) "1 The Revelation of Jesus Christ, which God gave unto Him, to show unto His servants things which must shortly come to pass; and He sent and signified it by His angel unto **His servant John**: 2 who bare record of the Word of God, and of the Testimony of Jesus Christ, and of all things that he saw. 3 Blessed is he that readeth, and they that hear the Words of this Prophecy, and KEEP those things which are written therein: for the time is at hand."

As we read "in The Beginning" (Genesis 1:1), the Law of God came from the heart of God, and was given to Moses, to be given to men. The Pentateuch (the first five Books of the Bible) are a written Testimony from God to His people. Moses was the human tool with which God wrote His Eternal Words. Moses was also the instrumentality, or conduit, which God dramatically used in giving to mankind the Ten Commandments. "And He gave unto Moses, when He had made an end of communing with him upon Mount Sinai, two tables of Testimony, tables of stone, **written with the Finger of God**" (Exodus 31:18). The LORD thus impressed forgetful and unloving men with their necessity to always obey God. But this was, by no means, the *end* of God's demonstration.

"I am Alpha and Omega, **The Beginning and The Ending**,
saith the LORD,
which Is, and which Was, and which Is To Come,
The Almighty"
(Revelation 1:8).

The mighty depiction of God's Love for His Word, of His regard for man's obedience to His Word, by visually writing His Law with His Finger, was only a "shadow of Heavenly things, as Moses was admonished of God" (Hebrews 8:5). This demonstration of Love was fulfilled, as was the Law (for "Love is the fulfilling of the Law" [Romans 13:10]), by Jesus Christ, Whose very Being is Love. "God is Love" (1John 4:8). **Love always obeys** and satisfies the Law. "**If ye love Me, keep My Commandments**" (John 14:15). That Standard for Loving Obedience will FOREVER BELONG to "JESUS CHRIST, Who is the Faithful Witness, and the First Begotten of the dead, and the Prince of the kings of the Earth... Him that **loved us**, and washed us from our sins in His OWN BLOOD" (Revelation 1:5).

- (Romans 10:4) "For Christ is The End of the Law for Righteousness to every one that believeth."

And "Moses **the servant of God**" (Revelation 15:3), in authoring the first quarter of the entire Old Testament, who is mentioned periodically throughout the Bible in 774 verses, and finally, as being an important part of God's plan at the very end of the Scriptures, totally justifies The Word's title of him as "The Servant of God" (15:3). For we believe that one of the "Two Witnesses" spoken of in the Book of Revelation will be Moses. "And I will give Power unto My Two Witnesses, and they shall prophesy a thousand two hundred and threescore days, clothed in sackcloth" (Revelation 11:3).

"Both Moses and Elijah met with the LORD Jesus at His Transfiguration, which depicts their importance to our LORD's program for the future salvation of Israel. "30 And, behold, there talked with Him two men, which were Moses and Elias: 31 Who appeared in glory, and spake of His decease which He should accomplish at Jerusalem" (Luke 9:30-31). Though the Revelation tells us that the ministry of the Two Witnesses will be cut short by their death, i.e., the "Beast that ascendeth out of the Bottomless Pit shall make war against them, and shall overcome them, and kill them" (11:7), in the case of Moses, it will not be the first time that someone died, was resurrected, and (presumably) died again, i.e., Lazarus, the brother of Mary and Martha. "43 And when [Jesus] thus had spoken, He cried with a loud voice, Lazarus, come forth. 44 And he that was dead came forth, bound hand and foot with graveclothes: and his face was bound about with a napkin. Jesus saith unto them, Loose him, and let him go" (John 11:43-44)." --from our "Commentary on the Book of Revelation" -- <http://WhatSaithTheScripture.com/The.Holy.Bible/index.html#Revelation> --, chapter 11: "The Two Witnesses and the Seventh Trumpet" -- <http://WhatSaithTheScripture.com/The.Holy.Bible/Commentary.Revelations.11.html> --. [For more background on Elijah, please read our "Elijah and the Prophets of Baal" -- <http://WhatSaithTheScripture.com/Stories/Stories.of.Faith/Elijah.Prophets.of.Baal.html> --.]

There is soon to be some Heavenly singing. And Moses will have his part in that also, as this last Book records for us.

(Revelation 5:9-13) "9 And they sung a New Song, saying,

*Thou art Worthy to take the Book,
and to open the Seals thereof:*

*for Thou wast slain,
and hast redeemed us to God
by Thy Blood*

*out of every kindred, and tongue,
and people, and nation;*

*10 And hast made us unto our God kings and priests:
and we shall reign on the Earth.*

11 And I beheld, and I heard the voice of many angels round about the Throne and the beasts and the elders: and the number of them was ten thousand times ten thousand, and thousands of thousands; 12 Saying with a loud voice,

*Worthy is the Lamb that was slain
to receive power, and riches, and wisdom, and strength,
and honour, and glory, and blessing.*

13 And every creature which is in Heaven, and on the Earth, and under the Earth, and such as are in the sea, and all that are in them, heard I saying,

*Blessing, and honour, and glory, and power,
be unto Him that sitteth upon the Throne,
and unto the Lamb for ever and ever.*

(Revelation 15:3) "**And they sing the Song of Moses the servant of God**, and the Song of the Lamb, saying,

*Great and marvellous are Thy Works, LORD God Almighty;
Just and True are Thy Ways, Thou King Of Saints"*

Let us learn from Moses, that to be a "servant of God", we must KNOW God-- His Character, His Motives, and His Goals. And then, in knowing God, in knowing His "Works" and His "Ways", we shall be able to serve God with a meek and pure heart-- in love. "Thou shalt love the LORD thy God with ALL thy heart, and with ALL thy soul, and with ALL thy mind... Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself" (Matthew 22:37,39).

"Looking for that Blessed Hope, and the Glorious Appearing
of the Great God and our Saviour Jesus Christ;
Who gave Himself for us,
that He might redeem us from ALL iniquity,
and **purify** unto Himself a peculiar people,
zealous of good works"

(Titus 2:13-14).

A Poem

The Burial of Moses

by Cecil Frances Alexander*

By Nebo's lonely mountain,
On this side Jordan's wave
In a vale in the land of Moab,
There lies a lonely grave.
And no man knows that sepulchre,
And no man saw it e'er,
For the angels of God upturned the sod,
And laid the dead man there.

That was the grandest funeral
That ever passed on earth;
But no man heard the trampling,
Or saw the train go forth:
Noiselessly as the daylight
Comes back when night is done,
And the crimson streak on ocean's cheek
Grows into the great sun;

Noiselessly as the springtime
Her crown of verdure weaves,
And all the trees on all the hills
Open their thousand leaves;
So without sound of music
Or voice of them that wept,
Silently down from the mountain's crown
The great procession swept.

Perchance that bald old eagle
On gray Beth-peor's height,
Out of his lonely eerie
Looked on that wondrous sight:
Perchance the lion stalking,
Still shuns that hallowed spot,
For beast and bird have seen and heard
That which man knoweth not.

But when the warrior dieth,
His comrades in the war,
With arms reversed and muffled drum,
Follow his funeral car;
They show the banners taken,
They tell the battles won,
And after him lead the masterless steed,
While peals the minute-gun.

Amid the noblest of the land
We lay the sage to rest,
And give the bard an honored place,
With costly marble drest,
In the great minster transept
When lights like glories fall,
And the organ rings and the sweet choir sings
Along the emblazoned wall.

This was the truest warrior
That ever buckled sword,
This the most gifted poet
That ever breathed a word;
And never earth's philosopher
Traced with his golden pen,
On the deathless page, truths half so sage
As he wrote down for men.

And he had not high honor,--
The hillside for a pall,
To lie in state while angels wait
With stars for tapers tall,
And the dark rock-pines like tossing plumes
Over his bier to wave,
And God's own hand in that lonely land,
To lay him in the grave?

In that strange grave without a name,
Whence his uncoffined clay
Should break again, O wondrous thought!
Before the judgment day,
And stand with glory wrapped around
On the hills he never trod,
And speak of the strife that won our life
With the Incarnate Son of God.

O lonely grave in Moab's land!
O dark Beth-peor's hill!
Speak to these curious hearts of ours,
And teach them to be still.
God hath his mysteries of grace,
Ways that we cannot tell;
He hides them deep like the hidden sleep
Of him he loved so well.

*Cecil Frances Humphreys was born in Miltown House, country Tyrone, Ireland, and married the Right Reverend W. Alexander, Bishop of Derry and Raphoe, in 1850.
She wrote nearly 400 hymns, among which her work for children established her reputation as a poet.

End of "Moses, The Servant of God-- Part Two "

THE END OF THE "STORIES OF FAITH" SERIES